

# FALLING SKIES Episode Guide

Episodes 001-052

Last episode aired Sunday August 30, 2015





© 2015 [www.tv.com](http://www.tv.com)



© 2015 [www.tnt.tv](http://www.tnt.tv)



© 2015 [www.imdb.com](http://www.imdb.com)



© 2015  
[fallingskies.wikia.com](http://fallingskies.wikia.com)

## MikesFilmTalk

*Entertainment: Film, Television, Books, YouTube*

© 2015

[www.mikesfilmtalk.com](http://www.mikesfilmtalk.com)

The summaries and recaps of all the Falling Skies episodes were downloaded from <http://www.tv.com> and <http://www.tnt.tv> and <http://www.imdb.com> and <http://fallingskies.wikia.com> and <http://www.mikesfilmtalk.com> and processed through a perl program to transform them in a  $\text{\LaTeX}$  file, for pretty printing. So, do not blame me for errors in the text 😊

This booklet was  $\text{\LaTeX}$ ed on June 28, 2017 by footstep11 with create\_eps\_guide v0.59

# Contents

<b>Season 1</b>	<b>1</b>
1 Live And Learn . . . . .	3
2 The Armory . . . . .	7
3 Prisoner of War . . . . .	9
4 Grace . . . . .	13
5 Silent Kill . . . . .	17
6 Sanctuary, Part 1 . . . . .	21
7 Sanctuary, Part 2 . . . . .	25
8 What Hides Beneath . . . . .	29
9 Mutiny . . . . .	33
10 Eight Hours . . . . .	35
<b>Season 2</b>	<b>37</b>
1 Worlds Apart . . . . .	39
2 Shall We Gather at the River . . . . .	43
3 Compass . . . . .	47
4 Young Bloods . . . . .	51
5 Love and other Acts of Courage . . . . .	53
6 Homecoming . . . . .	57
7 Molon Labe . . . . .	61
8 Death March . . . . .	65
9 The Price of Greatness . . . . .	69
10 A More Perfect Union . . . . .	73
<b>Season 3</b>	<b>77</b>
1 On Thin Ice . . . . .	79
2 Collateral Damage . . . . .	81
3 Badlands . . . . .	83
4 At All Costs (1) . . . . .	85
5 Search And Recover (2) . . . . .	89
6 Be Silent And Come Out . . . . .	91
7 The Pickett Line . . . . .	93
8 Strange Brew . . . . .	97
9 Journey To Xilbalba . . . . .	101
10 Brazil . . . . .	103
<b>Season 4</b>	<b>107</b>
1 Ghost In The Machine . . . . .	109
2 The Eye . . . . .	113
3 Exodus . . . . .	117
4 Evolve or Die . . . . .	119
5 Mind Wars . . . . .	123
6 Door Number Three . . . . .	127

7	Saturday Night Massacre . . . . .	129
8	A Thing With Feathers . . . . .	131
9	Till Death Do Us Part . . . . .	135
10	Drawing Straws . . . . .	139
11	Space Oddity . . . . .	143
12	Shoot the Moon . . . . .	145

**Season 5** **147**

1	Find Your Warrior . . . . .	149
2	Hunger Pains . . . . .	151
3	Hatchlings . . . . .	153
4	Pope Breaks Bad . . . . .	155
5	Non-Essential Personnel . . . . .	157
6	Respite . . . . .	159
7	Everybody Has Their Reasons . . . . .	161
8	Stalag 14th Virginia . . . . .	163
9	Reunion . . . . .	165
10	Reborn . . . . .	167

**Actor Appearances** **169**

# **Season One**



## Live And Learn

Season 1

Episode Number: 1

Season Episode: 1

Originally aired:	Sunday June 19, 2011
Writer:	Robert Rodat
Director:	Carl Franklin
Show Stars:	Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)
Guest Stars:	Dale Dye (Porter), Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Lynne Deragon (Kate Gordon), Martin Roach (Mike), Dan Petronijevic (Billy), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Brent Jones (Click), China Anderson (Young Survivor Kid (voice)), Adam Butcher (Farley), James Collins (Cueball), Elias Edraki (Wilson), Jaclyn Forbes (Elyse), Jonathan Hagey (Refugee), Emily Hahn (Young Survivor Kid (voice)), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Jessica Kristy (Teen), Gerry Mendoza (Tai Chi Civilian), Mya Michaels (Parent #2), Wesley Morgan (Simms), Gage Munroe (Eli Russell), Colin Pitts (Fighter), Devon Richards (Militia Commando)
Summary:	After an unprovoked and devastating alien invasion of Earth leaves the planet in tatters the remaining humans must learn to work together and fight the aliens if they are to continue to exist, Former history professor Tom Mason as Second In Command of the 2nd Mass must juggle his duties as leader with his duties as a father to his 3 sons, One of whom is being held captive by the aliens.



"I was in school when the ships came," a little kid's voice tells us. We didn't use nuclear bombs because we thought they might be friendly, but they weren't. They used something that stopped all the machines. They wiped out the army. Moms and dads fought.

The aliens kill grown-ups and catch kids and put devices on them to control them. Matt, the young boy, thinks the aliens might have gotten his brother Ben. His dad is out fighting.

Tom Mason (Noah Wylie) runs in bombed out streets, going after a cart of food. Laser shots take out the cart and

they're forced to leave it. He and his son Hal run between burning cars, trying to avoid the hail of gunfire. There are live aliens, called "skitters", and mechanical ones called "mechs". Other resistance fighters put down cover fire.

Tom and Hal hide under a car, they're helpless to aid a woman who gets shot and is wounded, then preyed upon by aliens.

Tom meets up with more fighters, who tell him the aliens are on the verge of taking a key part of the city. They watch as a cloud of something envelopes the city behind them.

Back at camp, they report their casualties and walk through throngs of hungry people warming themselves by burning oil drums. Tom checks on his son, Matt.

Anne (Moon Bloodgood) tells Tom about her talk with Matt and the pictures he drew. She's encouraged that he's drawing his whole family.

Tom is summoned by the commander, Porter, who tells him it's time to leave the city because they've picked it clean. Tom doesn't want to leave the kids that the aliens have taken hostage. The commander says they'll travel in packs of 300, with 100 fighters and 200 civilians each. He's already sent out 9 units. He tells Sam he'll have Jeffries as his second in command.

Weaver (Will Patton) will have the Second Massachusetts, replacing Jameson. He's giving him Tom as his second in command. Weaver wants to stay and fight, but Porter points out they don't know how to fight them, so they have to run and hide instead.

He tells them they're trying to figure out the "harness situation" – the vertebrae braces the aliens put on children.

When Weaver leaves, Porter tells Tom to use his degree in military history to defend the civilians.

Around the campfire later, they tell stories of impressive alien kills. Hal looks at the alien ship parked on the horizon and muses about infiltrating it and blowing it up.

Tom suggests a few historical approaches, including tunneling under it with TNT, and earns the name "Professor Kicka—."

Hal asks his dad to ease up on the history lessons when his friends are around. Even post-alien invasion, he's embarrassed by dad.

Anne treats the wounded. She's a pediatrician. She asks Tom what the plan is. "Retreat, regroup, return, revenge," he tells her.

Weaver barks orders at Tom like they're in the military.

Matt wonders if he'll still get a birthday party when they're on the move.

Everyone packs up to head out. Tom looks over stacks of books. He weighs *Tale of Two Cities* and *20,000 Leagues Under the Sea* and takes the lighter one – Dickens.

They head out.

They walk through a neighborhood and Anne remembers visiting one of the houses once with her husband. He was a painter.

They stop to pick over the food supplies. Weaver laments that they're moving slowly with all the civilians. Tom suggests he take a small group of fighters and go back for food since Weaver won't detour with the whole group. Weaver agrees. Tom rounds up six people, including Dai, who comes with a stick of C4.

Matt tells his dad about his birthday wish. He wants everything back the way it was.

Tom looks at maps, with Hal and Karen set to scout the food locations out.

Waiting for Hal to return, Tom finds a boy's body lying nearby. He had a harness on. Someone tried to take it off him and it killed him. He's about the same age as Tom's son Ben.

Hal surveys the food location and hears aliens coming. He ducks for cover by a stream. He sees a dozen children walk by like zombies. They have harnesses on. One is his brother.

Back with his dad, Hal wants to get his brother, despite the odds. Tom has to tell him they can't. Hal tries to leave, but Tom wrestles him to the ground and tells him they have get the food first and plan better.

Tom draws up a plan. He'll go in at dark with Dai and Hal and if the coast is clear the rest should follow. If they hear shots, he tells them, they should leave.

He tells them they don't have to kill them all, just enough to make trouble. "We can make it too painful and too costly for them to stay," he says.

Tom tells them history is full of invading forces leaving because inferior forces made too much trouble. When his historical examples don't work, he cites Red Sox-Yankees in 2004. "We can beat 'em," he says.

After night has fallen, the three sneak into the warehouse. They creep along the aisles. It seems empty. They signal for the Jeep. They start loading it up quietly. As they're packing, an alien hand appears. It leaps out at Hal as he's unloading food. Tom comes and shoots at it, but he's soon taking fire. He runs for cover and arms the C-4. One of the mechs stalks them.

Tom wheels a cart toward it with the C4 and blasts it to bits. Now he has to contend with the skitter. It has him down on the ground and cornered, but Dai saves him by shooting it. It dies slowly, making burbling noises.

Tom and the group meet the others at the designated bridge, bringing a Jeep full of food.

Tom brings some in to Weaver, who asks "What took you so long?"



Tom tells Weaver about Ben. After they accomplish their next mission of taking the armory, Tom wants to go back to get Ben. Weaver says as his commanding officer, they're not allowed. But Tom asks what he would do if he had a chance to get his kids back.

Tom says it's possible to kill them, you just have to get close.

Matt enjoys a birthday cupcake from Anne. Hal brings him a present, saying it's from Tom. It's a fancy skateboard like he used to have, a Ripstik. He straps on a helmet and wheels around as everyone watches. He lets the other kids try it out until Weaver signals it's time to go.

At night, Tom and Dai scope out the armory. There are fresh alien tracks.

Hal throws a ball for a dog to chase. But the dog doesn't retreat when a mech comes at it. Jimmy, who is 13, runs after the dog and Tom narrowly saves him from alien fire.

Matt wakes up in a real bed in a kid's room. Tom comes to get him. They're moving out from the houses they've been staying in. Tom's planning to go look for Ben later.

He checks in with Weaver, who thinks they failed in their mission because they had to retreat. Weaver says that means Tom can't go look for Ben like they agreed.

Anne asks Weaver why the fighters are getting to sleep in houses while the civilians are in tents. He makes the case that it's because his fighters need rest and the civilians would be too hard to mobilize out of houses.

Weaver tells her the civilians are welcome to leave if they don't like his rules. She tells him they're not just "eaters" like some soldiers call them. They cook, clean and haul trash. Weaver says the civilians concerns don't matter until the fight is over.

Tom gets oatmeal and walks around the civilian camp with Anne. He thinks civilians are "a liability and a hindrance." But they're the best reason they have to fight.

Uncle Scott leads school for the kids, telling them about biology. Later, he talks with Tom about the fact the skitters have six legs and the mecs have two and wonders what this means about the aliens.

Hal talks to a dad who's looking for his son who was also taken. He wants to tag along when they look for the kids.

Lourdes follows Hal around, irritating Karen.

Karen and Hal go into one of the houses and wonder about the girl who's room they're in. Karen teases Hal about Lourdes, but he assures Karen she's the only one. They're about to kiss when Tom comes in to tell them they're going back to the armory tonight on Weaver's orders. Karen thinks it's a waste of time.



## The Armory

Season 1  
Episode Number: 2  
Season Episode: 2

Originally aired: Sunday June 19, 2011  
Writer: Graham Yost  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), Brianne Brozey (Actress), James Collins (Cueball), Yulia Lukin (Soldier)  
Summary: Tom and Hal lead a squad in a search for supplies but are ambushed by a rogue gang of humans led by ex-con John Pope, Pope plans to use the hostages to gain control of the 2nd Mass' supply of weapons that they've stockpiled since the invasion began.



Tom rounds up the fighters to go out, but tells Jimmy to stay. They tell him it's because they need someone bigger in case they find weapons.

Weaver tells him reassuringly that he's a good soldier.

Back at the armory, Tom and his people go in. One of them gets hit by two arrows. They exchange fire with a person, who tells them to put down their guns and turn over their weapons. He shows Tom they have Karen and Hal.

Tom puts his guns down just in time for a mech to drop through the ceiling.

One of the scavengers is hit in the leg,

so his people carry him and march Tom and his people with hoods on like prisoners.

They remove their hoods so they can see they're in a school auditorium. Tom says they're just a group of people trying to survive, not part of a resistance.

The leader, Pope, wants to talk the girl (Karen) and the boy (Hal), but no one else. He holds a sword on Tom, then pulls a gun. Hal speaks up to save his dad, saying they can get them more guns and are part of the Second Massachusetts resistance.

The marauders know all about them. They've been watching them for two days. Pope's brother was wounded and lies unconscious on the stage.

Pope guesses that Tom is Hal's dad. He says they're not going to kill anybody because they're way too valuable. He wants to make a deal for the .50 caliber gun back at camp. He calls for a girl named Maggie in his group to take Hal and the terms of their deal back to camp.

With everyone else taken away, Pope tells Tom the invasion is the best thing that ever happened to him. Tom eyes the gun strapped to Pope's brother's leg on the stage nearby. Pope says they've been having a blast.

Maggie marches a hooded Hal back toward camp. He makes a move on her, but she knocks him down and pulls a knife on him. She warns him if he pulls anything again, she'll shoot.

Pope continues talking at Tom, who seems to be trying to get free of his bindings. Pope tells Tom the way to kill the aliens, whom he calls "Cooties", is by taking out a few legs to slow them down, then going for the head.

He tells Tom the ships are drawn to heat, so they lit an engine block on fire to draw one. They fired at it with their bazooka, but the ship dodged it.

Tom asks for a beer and Pope goes to get it.

Maggie releases Hal outside their camp and tells him he has an hour to return.

In a house, Anne tries again to talk to Weaver about housing. Hal arrives.

Pope releases Tom and gives him a beer – it's cold. They've been running a fridge on a generator.

Tom tells Pope about his son being harnessed. Pope says Maggie saw a group of harnessed kids down by the hospital. Tom makes his way over to Pope's brother, but Pope busts him by asking him. He pulls out a gun. He knows Tom's been eyeing the gun the whole time. Tom backs down.

Tom suggests Pope join the resistance, but Pope essentially thinks the resistance is futile.

Weaver calls for Mike and tells him what's going on. Mike asks how they make the trade, but Weaver says they can't or the marauders will just bleed them dry with demands. He orders Anne to get the civilians ready to move. He points out to Hal that they can't go fight them because they don't know where they are.

Weaver orders Mike to watch Hal. Once they're in another room, Mike gives Hal his gun and lets him go. Hal leaves the gun, knowing Maggie might be watching.

He runs into Anne, who says she can help. She goes with Hal to meet Maggie and tells her she's a doctor.

Maggie comes back. Pope doesn't feel like dealing and tells Anne to fix his brother Billy or he'll kill her. She stitches up his leg.

Pope takes his guys to go rob the Second Massachusetts. He leaves Maggie and two other people behind to watch Hal and Tom.

Pope summons Weaver with a flare gun. He wants the .50 caliber gun, the GTO and all their food. He says the aliens will see the flare soon and they'll all be dead.

Weaver orders them to leave the food and promises Pope he'll find him.

Back in the auditorium, Billy leers at Karen and demands she stand up and turn around for him. He promises Karen they're going to have a good time. His intentions are not honorable.

Maggie grits her teeth and asks Anne if Billy is going to live. When Anne says yes, Maggie shoots Billy and then Cue Ball, Pope's only men there. She tells them they each deserved to die.

Back at the field, Weaver is leading people away when he hears gunfire. Tom's people are firing on Pope. Anne tells Weaver to get everyone to follow them.

One of Pope's guys tries to shoot the .50 caliber, but Tom and his guys shred him. Tom reminds Pope the ships are going to target the flares and he's sitting in the middle of them. Tom tells him to join or die.

Instead, Pope hops in the GTO with the .50 caliber mounted on top and drives away, leaving his men to get incinerated by the alien ships. He doesn't get far before Weaver stops him and disarms him.

They make camp at a school.

Tom checks in with Weaver, who is not happy with how things went down. He reminds Tom about the chain of the command and reminds him to follow it when he gets back. Weaver is sticking to his word that they can go for Ben. He gives them three days.

Tom takes Pope to his cell. Maggie has chosen to stay and earn her citizenship as a fighter.

"I'll take a rest for a while," Pope says. "Being the leader of a post-apocalyptic gang of outlaws has been exhausting."

Tom and Hal prepare to go look for Ben with Dai and Karen. Maggie shows them the way.

## Prisoner of War

Season 1

Episode Number: 3

Season Episode: 3

Originally aired: Sunday June 26, 2011  
Writer: Fred Golan  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessy Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessep (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), James Collins (Cueball), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Johnny Larocque (Soldier), Llyane Stanfield (Civilian), Steven Weber (Michael Harris)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass comes face to face with Skitters and Mechs when Tom and Hal lead a mission to finally attempt rescuing Ben and the other captured teens. Tom's search for answers to nagging questions could jeopardize the plan to save the teenagers from the harnesses that is presented by the 2nd Mass' latest recruit Dr. Michael Harris.



Harnessed children, with alien machinery in their backs, work like drones on top of a building. There are a dozen of them and they're scavenging scrap metal. Mechs and skitters stand guard out front.

Tom and his group conduct surveillance from a rooftop across the street. There are 6 aliens and five of them. They're talking about coming back later when Karen knocks a brick off the roof and the aliens hear and open fire. They have to retreat.

Back at the high school HQ, Tom is immediately swarmed by parents of missing children asking if he saw them. Anne suggests the parents post their pictures on a bulletin board.

Porter is back and delivers a briefing in the command post. He reports a scout ran into resistance fighters outside of Chicago who know about groups in Texas, Oklahoma and California.

The bad news is alien structures are going up over other cities, like Boston. Porter orders them to collect intel and war material. Weaver tells them he'll be breaking them down into teams of four and six fighters.

Tom tells Porter what he knows about the harnessed kids. He tells them the science team removed harnesses from three kids, but they died hours later. He says now the chief surgeon thinks he has a solution, but he needs to test it. Tom knows he means Ben.

Weaver doesn't want to bother with rescuing a dozen kids, but Tom tells him it's important to keep hope alive by bringing parents their kids back. He tells Tom to just bring Ben back for now.

The civilians have set up school in the gym. Tom finds Matt sitting by himself. He's worried about his brother. He heard the kids die when the harnesses are removed. His dad tells him a doctor figured out how to take them off safely.

Uncle Scott brings Pope food in his cell. He objects to the preparation and rants about the technique. Turns out Pope was a chef.

Uncle Scott suggests to Weaver that they let him cook. Weaver checks with Maggie, who vouches that Pope can cook. He learned in prison.

When Pope comes in, he complains about their cooking equipment but says he'll take the job.

Tom checks with Anne about the doctor. She describes him as very smart and competent and sure he's the best for the job. His name's Michael Harris. Tom knows him.

Later, Michael tells Tom about getting separated from Rebecca, Tom's wife. He tells Tom he's sorry.

The next day, Tom and usual group watch the harnessed kids, looking for Ben. Mike sees his son Ricky and immediately jumps up yelling and runs for him. Tom tries to cover him and throws a bomb at a mech. Mike gets his son in the truck. Tom wants to go back for Ben but a mech shoots at him and knocks him out. Dai grabs Tom and throws him in the truck.

Karen and Hal run but soon find a mech in their path.

Cut to Tom waking up with Dai, Mike and Ricky. He doesn't want to go re-arm and wants to get Karen and Hal.

He takes Dai's shotgun and walks down a dark hallway. He hears a noise and is soon face to face with a skitter.

He runs but it races after him on the ceiling and knocks him down. It gets on top of him, but Tom scoots for his sawed off and blows off one of its legs. That slows it down so he can shoot it in the head. He beats it with his gun until it stops moving.

Back at camp, Anthony reports to Weaver that they didn't get Ben.

Weaver hears a hubbub and goes to investigate in the hallway. He finds Tom dragging the still kicking alien down the hallway. "I brought you a prisoner of war," he tells Weaver.

Weaver is impressed.

Tom gets a fresh gun and heads out.

Hal wakes up in the rubble to see his zombified brother dragging Karen away. A mech shines a light on him and five harnessed kids line up to face him. A skitter inspects him then the mech opens fire on the harnessed kids.

Dr. Harris prepares to do surgery on Ricky, who also has cystic fibrosis.

Weaver stops in and Dr. Harris essentially tells him to get out of his way. He says they have to cut the harness out instead of removing it entirely.

He lights a small torch and starts cutting the harness needles. He thinks the harness supplies the kids with a drug and they were dying when they were suddenly cut off. So he's pumped Ricky full of morphine in preparation for slowly lowering the dosage. They have to leave the probes in the kid.

Harris explains that the harnesses are partially organic, so over time they fuse into the kid.

Tom runs down a dark street and sees Hal stumbling toward him. Hal tells him the skitters took Karen. He doesn't understand why his dad left, but Tom says he was knocked out.

Hal tells him the mech killed the kids and let him go. Tom recognizes it as an old Nazi trick, leaving one alive as the messenger.

So if they go back, they have to get all the kids.

At the high school, Porter is excited to have a live skitter to study. He's going to have Dr. Harris stick around for three weeks.

Pope feeds people and Weaver says he'll give him a week tryout, but he still has to get locked up when he's not working.

Tom visits Ricky, who is still knocked out after the harness removal. Anne says he's stable and it seems like the procedure worked.

Tom finds Dr. Harris drinking Scotch outside the skitter's cell.

Harris says there are people who think that those surviving the first wave of the invasion are the best of mankind, but he doesn't think there's anything noble about running away.

Tom asks if that's how Harris survived. He blames him for abandoning Rebecca. Harris says he wasn't with her when the second wave attack started, but Tom says he found her with a bag that was too heavy for her to carry alone.

Harris says it was a split second decision and "I thought the community needed my medical skills..."

Tom decks him.

Harris then says it's actually Tom who's responsible for her death because that morning Tom was supposed to go with her looking for provisions. Harris says that because he's now alive, Ben has a chance to live.

Tom says the people who survived owe it to those that didn't to become the best of mankind.

He visits the wall of missing children and puts up Ben's picture. He finds Hal wrapped around Matt, sound asleep.

In its cell, the skitter wakes up. Ricky opens his eyes.





## Grace

Season 1

Episode Number: 4

Season Episode: 4

Originally aired: Tuesday July 3, 2012  
Writer: Melinda Hsu Taylor  
Director: Fred Toye  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), James Collins (Cueball), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Steven Weber (Dr. Harris)  
Summary: Tom and Hal lead a team to find more motorcycles for the 2nd Mass after Pope provides details on where they can be found but they must deal with Skitters and Harnessed Teenagers once they arrive. Back at the high school where they've set up base Dr. Harris and Anne disagree over the best tactic to gather more intelligence on the aliens.



Dr. Harris gets ready to examine the skitter that Tom caught. They wonder what it's thinking and study it. It gets agitated and they zap it. Tom promises it he'll remember it, too.

Mike waits for his son Ricky to wake up after having his harness removed. Dr. Harris gives Ricky more morphine to wean him off the alien drugs.

Weaver calls Tom to a meeting. Pope has told him about a place with motorcycles, he wants to send Tom after them. Tom wants to go get Ben first, but Weaver explains that they need the bikes to get more drugs so that when they get Ben

they can wean him, too.

Tom reluctantly agrees. Pope wants to go along because he's been there and can't give directions. Tom says yes, as long as he is unarmed.

Anne checks on Ricky. It appears his cystic fibrosis has gone into complete remission as a result of the harness.

Tom asks her about Rick's recovery. Anne says as long as they have enough drugs to wean him, he should be OK. She asks why he's having issues with Harris and he tells her that Harris saw his wife Rebecca die.

Maggie comes back late from recon on foot. She reports seeing harnessed kids being led into a hospital. One of the fighters thought they saw Tom's kid. There's no sign of Hal's girlfriend Karen.

Maggie asks Weaver why she had his guys keeping tabs on her. He says she's under suspicion because she was with Pope. She protests that it was not her choice, but he says she had a gun that whole time and could have used it.

As they're leaving, Matt runs out and asks his dad if he can go along. He wants to learn how to shoot guns. Pope hears Tom tell him no and then says Tom isn't doing Matt any favors. Tom thinks Matt deserves a childhood.

Out on their expedition to get the bikes, Tom leads a group of four including Dai, Hal and Pope. Pope enjoys the fresh hair and needles Anthony, a former police officer.

Tom tries to check on Hal, but he doesn't want to talk. Tom wishes Rebecca was there to talk to him.

Jimmy finds Lourdes looking at the wall of children. She was premed before the attack. She's praying for the missing.

Dr. Harris mocks Anne for showing the captured skitter pictures of earth and the galaxy. She thinks it's terrified.

Uncle Scott shows Weaver a radio he got up and running. He wants Matt to wind the radio and monitor it, since he's looking for something to do. "Guess what? He just made you the communications officer," Scott tells Matt.

As they're walking through a field, Pope notices skitters – they're asleep, hanging upside down from a freeway overpass like bats.

Dai reports mechs nearby in sleep mode. Pope wants to hose them, but Tom worries the mechs will come. Pope is upset at having to leave them alive.

Anne offers the skitter water. She's gently puts it through a small gate in its cage, but is interrupted by Dr. Harris. He wants to provoke a response from it so he's brought a dead one in. He uncovers it and the caged skitter goes nuts.

Listening to the radio in another room, Matt hears a sudden burst of static.

Harris and Anne struggle to shut the cage on the skitter. The radio static stops when it calms down.

Maggie finds Weaver and warns him that letting Pope go with Tom was a mistake.

Meanwhile, Tom and his group reach the bike store. Dai and Pope head to the repair bay for gas.

Tom finds Hal looking at a pink motorcycle keychain. He thinks Karen would have loved it. Hal is upset Karen was along on the mission. Tom tries to give the advice he thinks his wife would have, and Hal gently mocks him for his ineptitude.

Back with the alien, Dr. Harris is ready to cut into it. Anne tries to talk him out of it, saying they need to study it and attempt to communicate with it. Harris brushes her off, saying it's his call. The skitter appears to pay attention.

Mike sits by Ricky as he starts to wait up.

"Who are you?" Ricky asks. He doesn't recognize his dad. They're in the same room with the skitter. Ricky looks at it then puts his head down.

Mike goes over to the caged skitter. He tells it Ricky his son and is healthy, probably because of the skitter. "That's why you get this chance to live – or not," he says.

Anne visits Uncle Scott, bothered about something.

Mike asks the skitter to talk to him, to explain itself. He shows it a picture of earth and a piece of paper and asks it to point to a picture and make a sound. He asks why they attacked. When the skitter does nothing, Mike picks up his gun.

He aims it at the skitter.

Back with the radio, Matt gets static again. Scott tells Anne they heard it a minute ago, too. They don't know what's causing it.

Mike keeps aiming his gun at the skitter and demands it make a sound. He jams the gun into its mouth and commands it to speak. The radio makes more noise in the other room. Mike jabs again and the skitter collapses.

After examining it, Harris explains that there seems to be a pressure point in the skitter's mouth and Mike probably gave it a concussion and knocked it out. Anne has Scott bring the radio. She connects the dots about the timing of the radio noise.

Harris is skeptical and mocks her idea as he prepares to examine a dead skitter's brain for signs of radio.

Back in the shop, Pope knocks Dai unconscious and takes off. They're happy to see him go and don't follow.

Pope goes back to the sleeping skitters. He throws a grenade hooked to a gas can at the hanging bunch and they explode in a ball of fire.

Back at the bike shop they hear the noise and see a giant cloud of smoke. They know it'll attract attention.

In the school, the caged skitter makes soft noises and Rick wakes up again. The removed harness is laying near him. He picks it up and places it on his back. It reattaches quickly. He walks over to the skitter.

Mike checks on Anne and Harris. They got nothing from the dead one, its brain was too mushy. They hear the radio static again. Harris says that's proof Anne is wrong since the skitter is alone, but Mike realizes Ricky is with it.

They run back to the room and find Ricky at the skitters cage. Harris talks to Ricky, who answers for the skitter. He wants to go and says this child is one of "ours" and he'll be punished for losing him. He says they can help him by killing him.

Mike runs to his son and takes the harness off him. Ricky collapses. He doesn't understand how Ricky could do that to himself.

Hal runs back from checking on Pope's destruction. He saw harnessed kids nearby. The kids walk into the clearing in front of the shop holding automatic weapons. The kids open fire, but Tom won't shoot back. Dai is hit in the leg.

Tom thinks if they find the skitter controlling them they can kill it. He realizes the kids only shoot when there's a target.

They throw out a gas can as a decoy and Hal and Anthony make it out on bikes. Tom puts Dai on his bike in the shop and they prepare to make a run for it, when they see a skitter in the shop. They fire on it and speed off. Tom has to leave the kids, but says they'll get them next time.

Back at the school, Tom and Weaver discuss the tactic of using the harnessed kids as soldiers. Tom thinks it shows the skitters think like humans, which means they might be able to find a way to beat them.

"You know, your optimism is starting to get a little annoying," Weaver says. Tom tells Weaver that tomorrow he's going for more drugs and then the harnessed kids. Weaver agrees.

Tom finds Hal with the last "Harry Potter" book, which Tom was reading to Ben before he was captured. Hal thinks Ben will be different when they find him. He says when Ben took Karen, he was staring at him and he didn't seem like Ben. Tom thinks he'll be fine.

Anne catches Tom up on the radio signals. She says they're not strong, or the skitter could have summoned help. She tells him about Matt's job. Anne has patched up Dai, and goes to get him a crutch.

The dinner bell rings.

Maggie has heard about Tom's planned drug run and suggests she has an idea. In the cafeteria, Tom finds that Pope's farewell gift to everyone was fresh baked bread.

Lourdes prays over her dinner, giving thanks. Weaver thinks it's a little silly, but Hal says he's thankful for the motorcycles and Anne is thankful for friends. Tom literally breaks bread with Weaver.

Anne suggests Lourdes say another prayer after she has everyone's attention. They all hold hands and pray.



## Silent Kill

Season 1

Episode Number: 5

Season Episode: 5

Originally aired: Sunday July 10, 2011  
Writer: Joe Weisberg  
Director: Fred Toye  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Jaclyn Forbes (Elyse)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), Wes Berger (John), James Collins (Cueball), Yulia Lukin (Soldier), Nathan Mitchell (Parker), Paulino Nunes (Frank), Joe Vercillo (Clayton's Soldier),  
Summary: Hal devises a risky new plan to save the captured teenagers but pulling it off could put someone in danger, Following a sudden tragedy Anne makes a discovery that could mean the difference between the success or failure of Hal's rescue plan.



Hal comes back from patrol with Maggie. She knew where the local dealer kept his stash. They bring back pills and heroin. Anne wants to get it ready for the harnessed kids Tom plans to bring Ben back. She wants Tom to know there are no guarantees. Tom understands his son could die, but he just wants to get him first.

The next day Tom relays news from a recon team that the second group of harnessed kids didn't come back last night. He shows Weaver his plan. Hal suggests just one person go in at night while the other skitters are sleeping. Weaver likes

the plan more than confronting them.

Anne brings the captive skitter water. Dr. Harris (Steven Weber) mocks her for taking care of it.

In the chow line, a pregnant citizen named Sarah tells Maggie she's uneasy having a captive skitter nearby.

Uncle Scott shows Tom the radios that they picked up the skitter frequency on. Scott says they only work when the skitters are transmitting, so he can't use it as an early warning system.

Weaver listens to Scott transmit an old Jimmy Cliff song. It gets to him and Weaver goes and grabs the record.

Tom and Hal work on skitter target practice with crossbows. Maggie offers a few pointers. She's also familiar with the hospital where Ben is being kept and suggests a new access door.

Scott pulls Anne aside to talk about something.

The skitter makes weird noises in captivity. Harris notices a new one and goes over to investigate. He sees that it's blinking rapidly and opens the access door. He shines a light in its eyes.

Scott reminds Anne of a camping trip to the lake they went on years ago. He wants to put up something of Sam. They're interrupted by ferocious skitter noise.

They race to the room to find skitter throttling Harris through the cage. Anne shocks it and it releases Harris. But it's too late. Harris is dead.

Weaver tells someone to send word to Porter. He wants to kill the skitter, but Anne tells him she was making progress. He gives her 24 hours and says he's going to kill it.

Hal finds Rick sitting alone in the courtyard. He asks him about being with the skitters. Rick says they always stuck together, but says they were allowed to go to the bathroom alone if they had to. Rick says if they try to get Ben the skitters will kill them all.

Lourdes invites Maggie to Sara's baby shower. Maggie wants nothing to do with it and scoffs at the idea.

Tom contemplates the missing children bulletin board. He tells Anne he's confident she can remove Ben's harness herself. Tom asks if her son is on the board. Tom knows that her son is dead, but suggest she put a photo up anyway.

Tom finds Hal briefing Weaver on a new plan. He wants to strap Rick's harness to his back and walk right in. Tom thinks it's crazy. "I don't know what's crazy any more, we're fighting aliens from outer space," Weaver says.

Tom tries to convince Hal not to go. Hal isn't sure it'll work, but says it's the best plan. Weaver pops pills as they debate. Weaver leaves it up to Tom. He says that until they figure out how to kill them without making any noise it's moot.

Tom brings the problem to Anne, who tells them about the spot in the soft palette. She tells them she doesn't want Hal going on a theory. So she picks up a scalpel, opens the skitter crate door and jabs the scalpel down it's throat until it stops moving. Dead.

She removes her bloody arm and walks to the bulletin board of children. She tells Tom that he shouldn't think it was hard for her to kill it because all she had to do was think about her family.

But she tells Tom the truth is she has no photos or mementos of them. She says "all I have is this" and slams her bloody hand on the wall, leaving her mark.

Later that night, Tom, Maggie and Hal sneak up to the hospital. Hal has the harness strapped to his back. Tom asks him what the distress signal is. "I yell 'Help!' as loud as I can," Hal jokes.

Tom tells his son he has total confidence in him and reminds him he has 15 minutes. Hal runs off and the others hide as a mech walks by.

Hal creeps down an empty hallway, making the turns he memorized. He hides as a skitter leads a line of harnessed children, including Ben, down a hallway and falls in line behind them, walking trancelike. He follows them into a room.

They all like down in unison. The skitter crouches over them and pets them. He's stroking Hal's head as Hal lies there.

Outside, Tom gets impatient after 20 minutes have gone by. He wants to go check on him. They creep closer as a mech patrols outside. Maggie suggest another way in.

Inside, the skitter has gone to sleep literally standing over his harnessed kids.

Hal slowly takes out a knife.

In the hallway, Maggie and Tom creep silently.

Hal is raising his knife when Ben sees him. The skitter wakes up. Hal jabs his knife in but the skitter doesn't go quietly. Tom appears in the doorway and helps shoot it with a crossbow.

Tom announces they're taking all the kids. He gives Anthony and Dai the signal and they lift the kids out the window.

Back at the high school HQ, Anne prepares to do all the surgeries in a row. Lourdes serves as nurse since she was in med-school.

Tom helps remove the harness. They notice Ben's pulse is dropping but it picks back up when they get the harness off.

Scott reports another of the kid's pulses is getting weaker and weaker, going into withdrawal. They race to get the harness removed and the kid hooked up to IV drugs. They get it removed but the kid fades quickly. They can't revive him.

Anne doesn't know what went wrong. They saved five kids, but she's upset they lost one.

Hal examines his chewed up arm in the hallway. Maggie walks by and he thanks her. He remarks that she knew the hospital really well and knew all the drug dealers. She confesses that

she had cancer when she was 16 and a doctor told her to smoke pot. She says the doctors gave her a 50/50 chance.

Tom tells Hal that Ben is still unconscious. He tells Hal he was incredibly brave and he's proud of him.

Later, at Sarah's baby shower, they've set up candles and a hung a sign. Anne hangs back for a while and joins in. The women all their wishes for the baby.

Anne listens with her stethoscope and lets Sarah listen.

Tom, Matt and Hal stand watch over Ben, reunited.

Weaver sees the happy family and then goes and puts on the Jimmy Cliff song. "Many rivers to cross, but I can't seem to find my way over...."

Anne heads back to the surgery classroom. Tom takes her hands and tells her she saved Ben. Hal calls to Tom. Ben is waking up. He recognizes his dad.





# Sanctuary, Part 1

Season 1  
Episode Number: 6  
Season Episode: 6

Originally aired: Sunday July 17, 2011  
Writer: Joel Anderson Thompson  
Director: Sergio Mimica-Gezzan  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), James Collins (Cueball), Jaclyn Forbes (Elyse), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Yulia Lukin (Soldier), Joe Vercillo (Clayton's Soldier), Gage Munroe (Eli Russell)  
Summary: Lt. Terry Clayton of the 7th Mass arrives at the high school with disturbing news that Skitters and Mechs are on their way to attack the 2nd Mass in retaliation for their breakout of the children. Clayton has a plan to lead the children to safety while the adults remain to fend off the attack, but his plan is met with strong resistance by all the parents, including Tom.



Anne checks out Eli, a kid who isn't feeling very well. His mom and dad hover. When Anne turns her back on the dad, he pulls a gun on her. He demands their antibiotics and pain killers. He's freaked out about the unharnessed kids walking around the school and the fact a skitter was in the building and killed someone. They want the medicine to trade after they leave. Anne resists and he whacks her. He and his wife and kid run off.

Tom, Weaver and Mike go after them. Weaver says it's Tom's fault because citizens are his responsibility. The family hunkers down in a driveway and the dad

trades shots with Weaver. Suddenly a man in fatigues is behind the family and has them cornered. He identifies himself to Weaver that he's Terry Clayton of the 7th Mass.

The wife hands over the meds and the family runs off.

Terry tells the men that the 7th Mass got wiped out by skitters and they're coming in this direction. His remaining people are holed up in a farm nearby in a valley. Porter, the commander, thinks the aliens are looking for slave labor for their structures. They're seeing one mech and one skitter patrols.

Porter has ordered the 2nd Mass to stay put about 72 hours until the 3rd Mass shows up. But they're supposed to send anyone under 20 ahead with Terry. Tom's not a fan of the idea and Weaver understands, but says they might have to push for it if an attack is imminent. Weaver orders Tom to broach the idea with the citizens.

Dai heads off on motorcycle recon. Tom tells everyone to prepare to be able to leave quickly. People have heard about the potential order to send the kids ahead. Anthony suggests they might be safer if the kids weren't around, since they know the aliens are interested in them.

Sporting a busted lip, Anne gives Maggie prenatal vitamins to give to Sarah. She didn't want Sarah to see Anne banged up. Maggie commends her for fighting back and gives her a gun for protection.

Ben does push-ups. His spikes are still protruding from his back. His little brother Matt asks to touch one. He asks what it was like with the skitters. Ben tries to explain how their telepathy works. He says it wasn't so bad after he was harnessed. He says the skitters cared about them in some way, like family. He says he missed it sometimes. Hal hears the conversation and is disturbed.

Anne treats a kid, but yells at her dad when he goes near the door. She's on edge. Hal stops by. He's worried about Ben. He tells her Ben just did 100 push-ups with little effort. He doesn't seem like himself.

Anne finds Tom setting up barricades around the school, including an over-turned car. They're just designed to slow the skitters down to buy the people time to escape through the tunnels. Tom can't decide how he feels about the possible order to send the kids first.

Jimmy stops by Weaver, looking for a job. He tells him he can help on watch, even though he's junior high-aged.

Anne thinks about the gun again. Cut to Maggie giving her shooting lessons.

Tom finds civilians confronting Terry about the order to send the kids ahead. They're in the gym surrounded by people. One man goes for his gun saying he'll react if anyone tries to take his little girl. Tom tells him to remember who the enemy is. Tom says he'll be the one to decide what they do if the skitters attack.

Jimmy heads out to join Parker on watch in an old school bus. Jimmy joins the existing chess game. They're looking at the board when they hear a noise and a light shines on them. It opens fire on them directly before they have time to react.

Everyone hears the shots and Tom tells them to get ready to move.

In the school bus, Parker is dead but Jimmy is unharmed. He ducks and covers as the mech claws at the school bus. He makes a run for it when his people start firing on it. Weaver realizes where it's coming from and that Jimmy's out there. Jimmy comes back in the school to find it's already been cleared out. We see the shadow of a skitter on the wall behind him.

He goes through a chain linked door, squeezing between the doors, but when he's on the other side, the skitter reaches through and grabs him around the neck.

Tom and Weaver are out to the school bus and Jimmy is left to defend himself inside. He draws his gun and shoots at it, but is soon out of bullets. The skitter is bearing down on him in the hallway and he's unarmed when a blast rings out. It's Weaver. He smoked the skitter. Weaver finds Jimmy near tears. He hugs him and tells him everything will be OK.

Later, with Anne and Weaver, Jimmy excitedly tells his story. He thinks he's in shock. "If you were a little older, we'd give you some whiskey," Weaver says.

Terry tells Weaver and Tom the 7th Mass was originally tracked by one skitter and one mech. The others come when they realize their recon isn't coming back. Weaver says it's time for them to seriously consider sending the kids away.

In the chow line, one of the citizens gives Ben a hard time, calling him a "razor back" and refusing to get in line with him. The man announces that kids like Ben are the reason the skitters are attacking them. Hal and Maggie intervene.

Ben goes to talk to his dad. He tells Tom he wants to go on ahead, so that Tom is free to fight when the skitters come. Tom asks his son if he's happy he's back. Ben says of course.

In the gym, Tom addresses the citizens. He tells them he's sending Matt and Ben ahead with Lt. Clayton. He says if everyone goes as planned, they reunite next night.

Tom assigns a security detachment, including Mike. Tom wants all the kids to go because they're the future and they have to come first. He gives them an hour to pack.

Hal finds Ben looking at a picture of their family from Six Flags. He wants Hal to hold onto it until he comes back for them.

Hal finds his dad and tells him he wants to go with Matt and Ben. He tells Tom about the morning his mom went to get food with Dr. Harris, that he and Ben got in a fight. He remembers his mom telling them they had to start looking out for each other. He feels like he needs to go with them.

The kids all say good bye to their parents. Jimmy thanks Weaver.

Terry gives Tom directions on where to find the 7th Mass and the kids. Hal tells Ben he's going with them. Tom says good bye to his kids. Anne takes his hand.

Terry leads the kids through a forest. Hal checks the map and questions a turn Terry makes. He says it's a shortcut. They reach the ranch near nightfall. Terry suggests everyone go to sleep and they'll do a tour in the morning.

Late at night, Terry comes to get Eli, the kid who ran away in the beginning. He says he's taking him to his family. Terry takes Eli outside where a young girl meets them. She tries to take Eli but he sees that she's harnessed and protests. A skitter comes out from the woods and zaps Eli with something that knocks him out. Terry remains calm and has a conversation with the skitter through the girl. She complains that he's late, but checks that he'll bring more in two days. "That's the deal," he says and walks away calmly as the skitter carries off Eli.

Terry heads back to the ranch lodge. He unlocks a padlocked door and goes down to visit someone handcuffed and chained to a table. He tells whoever it is that he was right, there were a lot of kids in that school. "I knew it was a good idea to keep you alive, Pope," Terry says.



## Sanctuary, Part 2

Season 1  
Episode Number: 7  
Season Episode: 7

Originally aired: Sunday July 24, 2011  
Writer: Melinda Hsu Taylor  
Director: Sergio Mimica-Gezzan  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick), James Collins (Cueball), Jaclyn Forbes (Elyse), Yulia Lukin (Soldier), Sarah Stunt (Tessa Greene)  
Summary: Hal finds himself having to take control and fight when an unexpected threat against the children of the 2nd Mass presents itself. Anne faces her own problems when Sarah goes into labor as the 2nd Mass is being evacuated in anticipation of an alien attack on the headquarters.



The kids play a soccer game at the ranch. Jimmy sees Ben is wide open but won't pass to him. A girl named Tessa chats up Hal and Lourdes intervenes.

Lt. Clayton leaves to lead the adult military escort back to the rendezvous point. Hal assures Ben that they'll see their dad when the 2nd Mass meets up with the 3rd in about two days.

Tessa's dad calls her over and reminds her that she knows why the kids are there. He tells her not to like them too much.

Back at the 2nd Mass high school HQ, Weaver hopes that Sarah doesn't go into

labor until after they move out even though she's overdue. Maggie assures Weaver that Sarah will keep up.

At the ranch, Hal makes food from the garden. Clayton tells Mike he saw his friends on their way. He brought back apples. He tells them he didn't see any skitters nearby.

Lt. Clayton and Tessa's dad make up an excuse to go to the barn and check on Pope. Clayton thanks Pope again for the intel. He explains that he knew Weaver wouldn't question orders if he thought they came from Porter. Pope questions Clayton's decision to trust the skitters.

They caught Pope breaking into their supply shed, where he killed Tessa's uncle to get in. Clayton leaves Tessa's dad alone with Pope. He takes out knife and Pope shows him he's broken free of his restraints. They fight and Pope gets the knife and the upper hand. He thinks about stabbing him, but leaves him unconscious instead.

Pope makes his way free with a rifle. He finds the 2nd Mass military men Clayton "escorted" home lying dead in a field.

Back at the high school HQ, Dai and Tom prep the motorbikes. Tom wants to go on patrol. He's anxious that the escort isn't back yet. Tom wants to do the half day walk to check on the kids. Weaver lets him and Dai go check, but orders them to come back.

Tessa's dad is back up on his feet and Clayton tells him not to worry about Pope. They plan to pretend like everything's normal until the next exchange tomorrow.

Clayton notices Rick's not eating. He remembers how he was sick all the time before the skitters took him. He looks at Ben and asks him how he can eat "their" food.

Lourdes notices a backpack in the other room – it belongs to Eli, the kid whose parents tried to steal medical supplies and who Clayton turned over to the skitters.

Hal and Tessa check out the night sky. He's nervous there aren't even patrols. He says it's the first time he's been apart from his dad since the attack.

Lourdes interrupts. She shows Hal and Mike the backpack. Hal notices where the sentries are posted and says it looks more like they're watching the ranch than for signs of attack. Mike says he's known Clayton for a long time and thinks there's nothing to it.

Later that night, Mike goes to check out the locked up barn. He breaks inside and sees where they were holding Pope. He finds other backpacks and kids things, including Eli Russell's jacket. He turns around to find Clayton holding a gun on him.

Clayton tells him Eli was there.

Then he tells Mike about the 7th Mass getting wiped out by skitters. They retreated and lost track of a girl named Megan. The skitters stopped attacking for a week and they realized they only wanted the kids. Megan came and talked to them later, harnessed and speaking for a skitter.

Clayton tells him they're trading kids for immunity for his men and their families.

Mike realizes the story about the 3rd Mass was all a ruse. Clayton asks him to make a choice and think about Rick.

Anne wheels Sarah on a gurney. She's in labor. The dad was a sperm donor. Maggie holds her hand.

Mike tells Hal what Rick was like before he was taken. He says he hated when Rick was taken, but he hates what they did to him even more. He grabs his gun and tells Hal about Clayton's deal. They get everyone up and start to leave, but run into Tessa. Hal asks her if she knew. She says she was going to talk to her dad to make an exception for him. She calls for her dad.

Mike and the kids run off into the woods around the ranch, with Clayton and the men behind. Clayton shouts that they need the little ones alive. They trade gunfire. Mike hunkers behind a truck with Rick and calls for Hal. He asks him to promise to take care of Rick.

Mike tells his son he loves him and tells him to run. Rick is stone faced and unemotional, but leaves. Mike stays behind to hold them off, but doesn't notice when Clayton sneaks up behind him.

The kids are running through the woods as a shot rings out.

Tom comes back from patrol, reporting to Weaver that Clayton's map is wrong. The escorts still aren't back. Tom is questioning Clayton's "orders". He goes back out to search.

Hal and Lourdes lead nine kids through the woods. They stop at a house to rest. Lourdes plays the piano. Ben looks at Rick's harness implants and feels his own.

He goes to talk to Hal, offering to go on ahead because he has better endurance than everyone else. Jimmy questions whether Ben will go to the school. Hal OKs the plan.

Ben runs to the school. He stops at a stream to get water and hears voices. He sees Clayton and his men on patrol.

Sarah's still in labor but Anne determines that the baby is breech. Weaver comes to check. He hears the baby is breech and offers that one of his daughters was as well and was born at home. He turned her around from the outside. He offers to help.

Tom and Dai stop on the road and see Ben. He tells them Clayton's coming and he thinks Mike's dead.

At the house with the kids, Rick stands and stares out a window. He says he's waiting.

They hear voices outside. It's Clayton and his men, heavily armed. They shout at the kids to come out. Hal shouts that he knows about his deal and opens fire. Clayton tells his man to take out Hal, but before he can fire, the man is hit. Pope is shooting from behind a tree.

"How's that skitter deal working now?" he shouts. They trade fire and Pope gets hit in the leg.

Pope looks up to see Tom opposite him. Pope catches him up on the situation. Tom says they can't get into a firefight because they'll lose. He takes Pope's magazine and tosses it and shouts that Pope is dead.

Tom comes out with his arms raised, saying he knows Clayton lied because he talked to Porter. He surrenders, shouting for Hal to come out. Hal listens, but asks his dad what he's done. Tom tells him he would have ended up dead. "First rule of combat is survive," Tom says.

Clayton marches the kids and Tom back to the ranch. Clayton orders the kids in the stable. When Matt protests, one of Clayton's guys turns on him with a gun and a shot rings out.

We see Weaver just fired. Another of Clayton's men turns his gun and Weaver takes him out too. He asks who's next. Weaver is there with dozens of men. Clayton drops his automatic weapon and asks if Weaver's going to shoot him.

"Only if I have to," Weaver says.

Clayton takes a few steps and asks Tom what comes next. Then he suddenly reaches for a gun he had tucked in his shirt and wheels on Tom. Tom shoots him dead.

Hal asks his dad if he knew they'd be waiting. Tom hoped so. Ben runs out. Tom sent him to Weaver.

Jimmy thanks Ben.

Weaver tells the traitors they can stay or go but if he finds them dealing with the skitters, he'll kill them all.

Back at high school HQ, Pope is surly to be on a bed next to the crying baby. Tom points out he could have kept running. Pope acknowledges that he probably will if given the chance. There's a spot in the kitchen for him until then.

Hal leads a service for Mike, saying he chose to fight for his friends. Maggie takes his hand. Tom tells his friend to rest easy. "We'll take it from here," he says.

Weaver says Clayton told his skitter friends he'd secure their kids, so they should have a couple of days.

Rick says he doesn't understand how people can kill each other. "We would never kill one of our own," he says to Ben. "You should understand that."





## What Hides Beneath

Season 1

Episode Number: 8

Season Episode: 8

Originally aired: Sunday July 31, 2011  
Writer: Mark Verheiden  
Director: Anthony Hemingway  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessie Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Daniyah Ysrayl (Rick)  
Guest Stars: Bruce Gray (Uncle Scott), Dale Dye (Porter), Dylan Authors (Jimmy Boland), James Collins (Cueball)  
Summary: Captain Weaver's mental condition continues to deteriorate causing trouble for Tom and Hal when he joins them on a reconnaissance mission. Back at the high school Pope constructs a potent weapon to use against the aliens, and Anne makes a shocking discovery while performing an autopsy on a dead Skitter.



Weaver admires a drawing by his daughter Sophia on the fridge, then wanders outside. He hears a noise and thinks it might be his wife, Linda. He turns around to see a skitter lunging at him. Tom wakes him up. Captain Porter has arrived.

Outside, Hal finds Ben doing never-ending jumping jacks. Hal checks Ben's stop watch and finds he's been doing them for two hours and 45 minutes. Ben acts like maybe he set the time wrong so

he doesn't alarm Hal. He assures his older brother he's fine.

Porter commends Tom and Weaver for the job they're doing. Tom suggests they move on to get ahead of the skitters. Weaver is lost in thought. Porter asks Weaver when the last time he slept was.

Porter tells them recon says the skitters are pulling back to the structure over Boston. Tom thinks it could be clearing the field before a new attack. Porter has heard the same thing is happening over L.A. and Chicago. The resistance wants to launch a coordinated attack on the structures in four days.

Porter tells Tom to do recon on the structure. He tells them Clayton wasn't completely lying, the 7th Mass was wiped out, and they've lost contact with the 4th and 5th. The plan is for each remaining unit to attack one leg of the structure, bomb it so it'll collapse. They have the materials, but didn't have the expertise until recently.

They take Porter to Pope, who's still convalescing from his leg wound with Anne. "Isn't he the ex-con who fired on your unit?" Porter asks. "That is so three weeks ago," Pope says.

Weaver sees Ricky sitting nearby and goes to check on him. He's drawing pictures of the skitters and Weaver is particularly interested in a series of row houses Rick drew.

Weaver checks out Pope and decides he knows what he's talking about, but he doesn't want him on the mission, just prep.

Rick gives Weaver his drawing.

In the middle of the night, Weaver tries to sleep, but pops pills instead. He looks at Rick's picture.

Pope checks out Uncle Scott's demolition plans and collection of mech hardware. He mocks the bomb plans. Scott shows him a piece of a mech they salvaged, but as soon as he touches it, it blasts a hole through the wall. Matt runs off.

Tom finds him hunkered down in the hall. Tom tells him to stay away from Pope. Matt's eager to fight, but Tom says not yet.

Hal, Dai and Tom prep for their scouting mission. Tom asks them if they've noticed anything off about Weaver. He walks in as Tom's talking and announces he's going with them. He had a construction business and says knowing where to hit the structure is key.

Ben visits Anne for a follow-up. Some of the harnessed kids implants have gone away, but not his. She notices the skin around the implants looks weird. She prods at it with a scalpel, but Ben can't feel it. She really jabs, but he doesn't bleed or react at all. It's turning brown and crusty. Anne tells Ben she's worried about Rick, who doesn't seem to be reacting to his dad's death. Ben offers to talk to him.

Tom, Hal and Weaver look at the structure over Boston. It's made out of general contracting materials, steel and rebar. He says it's constructed simply.

Hal points out a group of skitters on a bridge. Something approaches them – another alien entirely that's much taller and lankier than the skitters, almost humanoid. The skitters bow down to it.

Tom worries that it's the first time they've seen them, that maybe they were hanging back until they thought it was safe.

They see someone running nearby and follow. They start getting shot at. A woman shouts at them and they tell her they want to talk. Sonia (Blair Brown) introduces herself. She's been living in Boston and invites them to talk.

Tom wants to see what she knows, but Hal and Weaver think they have to get going. Tom points out the fact she's survived this long means she knows what she's doing.

Weaver tells them to go inside and he'll stand watch. He looks at Rick's drawing again.

Matt wanders into the bomb making classroom where Pope is. He's nervous about some of the mech parts, but Pope assures him they're dead. He tells Pope he has nightmares and is afraid all the time, but he wants to be brave. Pope tries to demystify the mechs for him, telling him they're just parts and gears. He explains that their bullets are reconstituted from our military bullets.

"I wish we could use these on them," Matt says. "From the mouths of babes," says Pope, inspired.

Ben sits down with Rick, trying to make nice. Rick is bothered by how people look at them. He says they don't understand, but they will. Rick isn't upset about his dad's death, he says that was part of his life before. He tells Ben they're the lucky ones and the skitters love them and will come back for them.

Sonia pours Hal and Tom tea from fine china in her unscathed apartment. She's scavenged everything herself, but seems a little off mentally. She tells them aliens took her to a camp for a while, but the aliens let her go because they don't care about people like her.

"After what happened to us in the camp, I know that they don't want us here, not any of us," she says.

They hear a noise and rush out to find Weaver racing off on his bike. He pulled the sparkplugs on their bikes. They fix the bikes, and discuss how to get to Weaver's old house. They assure Sonia they're coming back.

Anne gets Lourdes for a secret project. She's cutting open the dead skitter in the basement. Anne cuts deep inside and finds a harness. It's what she was afraid of. It means they were harnessed and the thing might have been something else before.

Tom and Hal pull up to Weaver's old house, which looks like the row house Rick drew. Tom tells Hal to report their recon back to Porter.

Tom goes inside and finds old dried blood on the floor. He finds Weaver drinking straight from the bottle outside. He tells Tom he and his wife split a year before the attack. He shows Tom Rick's picture. He thinks it's his house and maybe the skitters planted it to get in his head.

Tom says it looks like most of the houses on the block. Tom doesn't think they can read our minds. He asks about the blood.

Weaver came to the house after the bombs and found his wife's fiancé badly hurt. His daughter Sophia was grabbed. He went after her and found her. He brought her home and tried to take the harness off himself. She bled out. Tom wishes he'd told him.

Weaver tells Tom he's been fighting for revenge this whole time, but it's not enough. He wants to sleep in his own bed. Tom tells him he can't quit days before the attack.

They hear a mech outside. Hal runs and hides. Weaver tells Tom he'll draw it out, but Tom respectfully declines that terrible idea.

Weaver notices his wife's glasses and regroups. He draws the mech out while Tom lobbs a grenade at it. Tom runs and it homes in on Weaver, drawing a bead on his forehead. It explodes.

Hal says it came straight for the house. They realize Sonia is the only one who knew where they were.

Cut to Sonia talking to someone through her key hole. The men are inside her apartment, with guns drawn. Sonia reports that she hasn't seen anyone since the men who were there earlier. Hal recognizes the voice on the other side – it's his girlfriend Karen. She's harnessed. Tom holds him back. Sonia says Karen has been bringing her food. Tom looks through the peep hole and see one of the humanoid aliens with her.

Sonia says the aliens promised they wouldn't hurt her. They realize she's been informing to them, that's why they let her go. Tom invites her to come with them, but she's delusional and wants to wait for her family to return. Tom then tells her they're heading to Gloucester. They're going in the opposite direction.

Anne looks at Rick's picture of a skitter cradling him. Lourdes wants to tell people about their discovery, but Anne is worried how people will treat Ben and Rick. She knows she has to tell Tom. "After everything he went through to get him, he could still lose Ben," Anne says.

Back at the high school, Tom tells Weaver he sees no reason to tell Porter about their side trip. He asks what changed his mind about coming back. Weaver shows Tom his wife's glasses. They were her only pair and they weren't in the house a week after the attack. He thinks that means there's a chance his wife and oldest daughter are alive.

They hear Pope yelling in the courtyard. He's leading a demonstration. Matt comes out and hugs his dad and tells him he's been working with Pope. He knows how to kill the mechs.

Pope explains the problem is it takes an entire magazine to dent a mech. He takes an assault rifle and demonstrates. The bullets bounce off. Then he shows them the mech metal slug. He loads it into a revolver. It blasts a hole clean through it.

Ben notices Rick running off.

Pope tells Weaver with bullet making materials he can melt the mech parts down and make more mech bullets. Weaver tells him to get on it.

"We're taking this fight to them," he announces to cheers.



# Mutiny

Season 1  
Episode Number: 9  
Season Episode: 9

Originally aired: Sunday August 7, 2011  
Writer: Joe Weisberg  
Director: Holly Dale  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessy Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Wes Berger (John), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Yulia Lukin (Soldier), Randy Triggs (Gibson)  
Summary: As the assault on the alien base draws closer, tension builds amongst the members of the 2nd Mass. Tom struggles to come to terms with Anne's new discovery about the Skitters.



It's movie night in the gymnasium. Our survivors laugh and laugh at the innocence of a goofy cartoon flickering on the temporary big screen. Meanwhile, Anne breaks bad news to Tom: the "skitters" might have once been something else. "Those needles in his back aren't going away, though," Tom says of his son. "Not like those other kids." Is Ben turning into an alien? Tom then pays a visit to Weaver, who insists he is "fine." Tom wonders if Weaver doth protest too much.

Suddenly, there is a ruckus. Dai returns, but he is injured. No one seems to hear his report before Weaver is telling his

men that tomorrow's mission is still a go. Tom challenges Weaver in front of the other soldiers, angering Lt. Danner. "The only way it can be successful is if the fighters have absolute confidence in their commanding officer," Weaver warns Tom, who is still thinking about Weaver's apparent mental break. Tom then vows allegiance to Weaver, who "rewards" the former professor with sentry duty. Later, Tom gets scary news from Lourdes and Anne: Weaver recently – and quietly – asked Lourdes to provide him uppers and downers. "Classic addictive cycle," Anne explains. Not good with the all-important battle looming.

Pope, meanwhile, supervises the pouring of the new "mech bullets" with his usual tact. He calls Matt a "prince" and wonders what it's like to be a Mason. "What's it like having hair like a girl?" Matt spits back. Pope is clearly angry, then calms himself and offers a weak laugh. Tom then approaches Weaver. "I know about the pills," Tom whispers. Weaver bristles – and has Danner remove Tom from the room at gunpoint. "You're making a mistake," Tom warns. "These people are depending on you!" Danner takes Tom to lock up in the boiler room lest he "poison the ranks."

Ben, meanwhile, visits Uncle Scott, who is working on a project to jam the radio frequencies used by the skitters. He turns on the radio ... and Ben immediately WINCES. The young man hears a screeching noise, but Uncle Scott doesn't hear a thing. Uh oh. Weaver then visits Pope with a "change of plans:" he now needs four bombs instead of one. Pope warns that the fuses

will be awfully short if split four ways. Weaver tells Pope not to ask questions. Later, Ben tells Rick about Scott's radio plan. Rick wonders why Ben hasn't admitted to being connected to the aliens. "You're not telling them because you're scared," Rick says. "You can feel the change coming."

Jimmy then tells Hal and Maggie that Weaver put Tom in the makeshift jail. Jimmy offers to help spring the captive and brings Tom a plate of dinner ... nodding conspiratorially at the prisoner. When Danner opens the cell door Tom bursts out. A scuffle between Tom and Danner ensues, but it's quickly broke up by the arrival of an armed Hal. Father and son hogtie Danner. "We've got to find a way to stop Weaver," Tom says. Tom then pays a visit to Dai in the infirmary. Dai explains that Porter is "probably dead" due to a massive skitter attack – and told Dai to abort the attack mission. Dai reported the same to Weaver, who promptly ignored the order. So Weaver is nuts.

Weaver, in the meantime, finds the hogtied Danner, who explains that Tom escaped with the help of Hal and Jimmy. Weaver is hurt that Jimmy would betray him. Later, Ben approaches Uncle Scott, asking the old man to turn back on the transistor radio. When Scott does, Ben doesn't hide the fact that he can hear something. "I don't know what I am," Ben confesses. CUT to Tom, who finds out from Pope that Weaver wanted the bomb split into four pieces – to make up for the other regiments who are clearly not coming. Tom aims a gun at Pope and "requests" that the munitions guy put the bomb back together. No dummy, Pope agrees. Tom then bursts in on Weaver, who defends himself by yelling, "The aliens have to know that we're not going to lie down!"

Pope then enters the room caring a VERY BIG GUN. He announces that he did not disarm the bombs, after all – and that he'd rather see the attack carried out. Tom lowers his own gun, giving Weaver control ... but not completely. "I took the blasting fuses," says Tom, explaining that the bombs can't be detonated without them. Tom then implores Weaver to just be honest – tell the people that Porter is dead and didn't want to attack. Tell the people that Weaver wants to go ahead with the mission anyway. Let the people decide. "You can trust our people the way they trust you," Tom reasons. Adds Anne: "We want to follow you ... all of us. You just have to let us."

Weaver lowers his weapon – and demands that Pope do the same. "Gather everyone in the gym," Weaver says. "By the way, I'll quit taking those pills as soon as we get back." CUT to the gym, where Weaver informs the people that the other regiments can't be reached ... and that Porter is probably dead. He asks for 50 volunteers to go on the attack mission without knowing whether the other regiments will show up to support them. "If you're with me, meet me in front," Weaver says. Turns out plenty of men and women answer the call. Outside, Margaret challenges Pope's murky intentions. Whose side is he on? Pope remains cagey – and Margaret warns the rogue not to cross her.

Tom then gets a double dose of unwelcome news: one, Hal has volunteered to go on the mission in Boston and, two, Ben can hear the aliens on Scott's radio. To be continued ...

## **Eight Hours**

Season 1

Episode Number: 9

Season Episode: 10

Originally aired: Sunday August 7, 2011  
Writer: Mark Verheiden  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Jessy Schram (Karen), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Wes Berger (John), Melissa Kramer (Sarah), Yulia Lukin (Soldier), Randy Triggs (Gibson)  
Summary: Tom stays behind to protect the camp and its occupants, while the rest of the resistance launch an attack on the alien base. Information regarding the aliens motives comes to light.



With Weaver's volunteer army off to Boston to attack the aliens, Tom deals with issues on the home front. He has recently learned that his son Ben can hear the alien communications via Scott's radio. Tom and Ben then leave the room to find a new battery for the radio, leaving Scott alone. Scott sees a shadow ... and hears something. He looks up and finds Rick climbing on the ceiling like Spider-Man. "I won't let you hurt them," says Rick, who leaps toward Scott. Uh oh. CUT to a line of trucks and motorcycles rumbling down a leaves-strewn road. The caravan stops and Hal notices that Weaver's

hands are shaking. "How much did your father tell you?" Weaver asks. Hal knows all about the pills, but explains that going to battle is the right thing to do.

Back at the high school, the gang learns that Rick is the traitor. Scott is OK, but the radio is destroyed. Ben soon seeks out Rick, who holds the stolen radio part in his hand. Rick wonders why Ben is upset considering that Ben can hear them too. "I want them out of my head," Ben says. Asks Rick: "Why? I think they're better than the humans." Rick then leaps out of the window. He runs into a little girl in the woods, who clearly has a harness in her back. "You need to tell us everything about the people you've been with," she says sweetly. Rick readily agrees.

Moments later, Tom finds a crying Rick sitting on the ground – alone. "She left me," he says. "I wanted to be with them, but they didn't care." Apparently, Rick was abandoned by the aliens. He apologizes to Tom for telling the aliens, well, everything. Not good. CUT to Weaver, who stops the caravan at the point where all the regiments were to rendezvous. Unfortunately, the other regiments haven't arrived, so the volunteers must choose whether to continue. Everyone still wants to fight, so Weaver splits the volunteers into four squads. "Those bombs of your's better be good to go," Weaver tells Pope.

Back at the school, Tom gives the stolen transmitter to Scott and tells him to get to work. He then tells the Margaret, Annie and others that the aliens know where they are – and will soon attack. Tom's plan: take the civilizations through a tunnel and head west. Tom then cites battles

from the American Revolution as inspiration of small forces triumphing over large forces. "So let's go do this," he says. In the meantime, Weaver has ordered Hal back to the school so he can tell the his father – and all the civilians – that the other regiments didn't show and that they need to evacuate the school. Hal resists. He wants to fight, but Weaver is adamant. "You listen to me: there will be other battles after today," Weaver said. He obviously cares for the boy.

Back at the school, Tom tries to usher Ben out along with the rest of the evacuees. But Ben refuses, explaining that, because the skitters keep changing their radio frequencies, he needs to stay behind and help Scott try to jam their communications. "If I can use what the skitters did to me to get back at them, then I have to," Ben pleads. Tom reluctantly agrees before hustling outside to join the front lines stationed outside the school. Just then, a mech marches into view. The defense team opens fire ... and the mech is taken down. The celebration is short lived, however, as a half dozen other mechs soon march into view. It looks bleak.

Inside, Ben helps Scott find the proper frequency, but the mechs still don't stop. The signal isn't strong enough – they need a bigger antenna. Ben notices the flag pole outside, grabs some jumper cables and makes a run for it. The mechs open fire ... and then suddenly begin to scramble aimlessly. Confused, the mechs turn and retreat. The radio jamming worked. The humans celebrate – and Tom embraces his heroic son.

Later, Hal returns with Weaver's news: the other regiments didn't show. The makeshift army is likely walking into a slaughter. Tom then has an idea. He tells Hal to retrieve the transmitter from Scott and pack it up. Tom then visits Anne, who is packing up and preparing to leave. "I'm not going with you right away," says Tom, who explains that he is headed to Boston to help Weaver. Anne asks about his sons. "If something should happen to me, you're the only person that I trust to watch out for them," Tom says. Then, suddenly, the two passionately kiss. Later, Tom says goodbye to his boys and gets into a car that has been rigged with Scott's radio. Time to head for the front.

CUT to the front. Tom arrives to find Pope cradling an injured Anthony. The professor orders Pope to drive Anthony back to Anne for help. Tom, meanwhile, will continue toward Weaver. Pope gives Tom a rocket launcher as a deadly peace offering. "Tom, good luck to you," Pope says. Speaking of Weaver, the captain sits bleeding in the cab of a truck when Tom arrives. He notices that the alien ships are all returning to the mother station. "We rattled their cage," Tom tells Weaver. In a last ditch effort that Weaver deems useless, Tom fires the rocket launcher at the one of the returning ships. It's a direct hit! The flaming ship SLAMS into the mother station, igniting a huge fire.

A chain reaction of blasts begin. "Good shot," Weaver says with a deadpan. "We got their attention." Laughing, Tom and Weaver then get into a truck and drive away. They make it some miles down the road before Tom SLAMS on the breaks. Karen is standing in the middle of the road. "They brought me here," she says in a monotone voice. "Because they don't understand." Just then, a HUGE alien ship lowers onto the ground. The hatch opens and one of the slimy leaders steps out. "They didn't expect resistance on this level," Karen says. "They find that ... interesting. They'd like to talk." Tom then begins yelling at the extra terrestrial. "You murder millions of people, you steal our children, and now you want to negotiate!?" Tom screams.

Karen warns Tom not to shoot ... "because of Ben." "They'll call him back unless you go with them," she says. Tom lowers his weapon and – against Weaver's protests – and walks into the belly of the alien ship. To be continued ...



## **Season Two**



## Worlds Apart

Season 2

Episode Number: 11

Season Episode: 1

Originally aired: Sunday June 17, 2012  
Writer: Mark Verheiden  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass)  
Guest Stars: Brad Kelly (Lyle), Laine MacNeil (Teresa), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Jessy Schram (Karen), Kyra Zagorsky (Bonnie)  
Summary: Three months after Tom has gone aboard the alien ship, Hal and Ben are still helping to protect the remaining members of the 2nd Mass, under the command of Captain Weaver while continuing the search for their father. Meanwhile Matt struggles to find his place in the world and Anne takes a more maternal role with the Mason boys.



(from the season finale) A harnessed Karen leads Tom, willingly, onto the alien ship.

Three months later, Pope, Weaver, Dai, Anthony lead a resistance through the streets and draw the aliens into a trap on the ground as Maggie, Hal and Ben ambush from above.

Pope especially enjoys taking the skitters out, reminding everyone to go arms and legs first, then heads for the kill shots. Ben has to be told to quit firing and when he notices one still moving, he Spider-Man jumps out of the building and takes it on with a knife.

They hear noise down the street and see another skitter. Ben shoots it and when it falls they see their long-lost father Tom behind it, but he's been hit by Ben's shot.

At the recon point, they take note that it took the skitters less than the expected eight minutes to show up with reinforcements.

Back at base, Anne checks on the casualties. They bring Tom in. He's hit in the side and the bullet's still inside. Eight-year-old Mat comes in and cries over seeing his wounded father.

On the operating table, Tom flashes back to his time on the alien ship. They kept him locked up, zapping him until harnessed Karen intervened. She reassured her she's still Karen, but with a dreamy, creepy far-off tone in her voice that makes him doubt her. He wants to know how he can help unharnessed Ben.

She tells him the aliens are allowing the resistance to surrender. They're just an "inconvenience." She tells him once he hears their offer, he'll understand. She takes him in to see an overlord.

At camp, the bullet is out of Tom, but he's weak. Weaver is worried about the harness effects on Ben, he's noticed some changes in him. Weaver is also worried because they haven't heard from any of the other units since the attack on Boston three months ago.

On the ship, the overlord talks through Karen to Tom. He explains they've studied human history in great detail. They're offering to set aside a protected area where human survivors would be located, a concept taken from Cambodia or Nazi Germany. "Be honest, oppression is in your nature," it says. They'll decide whether humans live or die.

At camp, Matt tries to convince Ben he's old enough to fight.

Maggie and Hal flirt over reloading magazines. Hal checks with Ben to remind him he should have followed orders.

Pope and Maggie head out on a mission trying to plan how to draw skitters into their trap. A beamer, a flying alien, swoops overhead and they take over. It roasts their truck and Pope's Harley.

Back at camp, Hal reports it looks like they targeted the truck. They think they have heat sensing capabilities. Without trucks, the resistance isn't mobile, and they're sitting ducks.

The next day, Weaver talks to Jamil, engineer and tech expert, wanting a way to move the trucks without the aliens being able to pick up on the engines.

Flash back to the ship, the overlord commands Tom to lead his people to the neutral zone. Tom cautions them not to draw too many lessons from the past. He grabs a weapon off a skitter nearby, cracking it in the head and blinding it in one eye, and then zaps the overlord, but they quickly knock him out.

Tom is let off the ship in a field with other captive resistance leaders. As the ship takes off, Tom realizes something isn't right. The ship takes off leaving just a mech and the red eyed skitter he wounded behind. They quickly mow down every human but Tom, teaching him a lesson.

At camp, Ben shows Matt how to shoot. Hal and Maggie find them and Hal takes rifle, which has live ammo in it. Hal reminds him their dad didn't want that for Matt. Ben just doesn't want the aliens to be able to take Matt, like they did him, or Karen.

When he says Karen, Hal gets angry and rushes him. Ben grabs him and is easily able to hold him off with his superior harness strength.

Tom finds a map at a burned out convenience store and sees he's in Michigan. He starts walking, following the train tracks.

One day he comes on a man trying to steal from a teenage girl. Tom attacks him and gets his gun, scaring the man off. There's a body nearby.

He wants to look at the girl's bike. She is scared and doesn't trust him. He wants to borrow the bike to Boston and she can come with him. They bury her friend first.

Anne reports to Weaver, who's worried about what happened to Tom on the ship. He offers her some 30 year old Glenfiddich he found. Weaver feels responsible for letting Tom go and the lack of success they've had fighting.

Jamil reports in with fiberglass, saying the warehouses nearby are full of it and if they wrap the engines, they won't heat through for an hour.

Anne gets called to Tom, who's feverish and bleeding again. She thinks she missed a fragment of the bullet inside him.

On the road, Tom and friend arrive outside Boston. They're near the school, but Tom knows his people wouldn't be there anymore. The girl tells him the woman they buried was her mom. She's lost all hope.

Back at camp, Anthony tries to figure out Pope's motivations. Hal reports a mech convoy a mile out headed toward camp, but they can't move Tom yet.

Weaver orders the convoy to leave. Maggie, Hal, Ben and Dai stay with the medical bus. Anne operates by flashlight.

Outside, Hal orders everyone to hold their fire as the mech pass by.

The mechs clomp past the bus. Anne finds the fragment in Tom.

The mechs don't stop.

The medical bus meets up with the convoy.

Flash back to Tom and his friend entering the city. He hears people firing and stops. She wants to go into the mountains like her mother was planning. She rides off.

Tom follows the sound of gunfire and Weaver's voice and comes upon a skitter. He fires on it then skewers it with rebar. He's struggling with it when Ben fires on him.

Tom wakes up in the bus next to Anne. Ben comes in and apologizes. Tom knows it was an accident. He's reunited with all of his boys.

He gets back on his feet and says hi to everyone.

Pope is suspicious out of how Tom got free.



## Shall We Gather at the River

Season 2

Episode Number: 12

Season Episode: 2

Originally aired: Sunday June 17, 2012  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Summary: Tom is plagued by haunting memories of his time with the aliens and begins to speculate that they may have tampered with his mind. Elsewhere, Pope oversees an interview with Tom; Ben's hatred toward the skitters escalates; and scouts discover a bridge that could lead the group to safety.



Tom dreams feverishly about Red Eye, his nemesis skitter, creeping into his bed and attacking him. He wakes up with a start.

The next day, Anne checks him out. He's worried about what they might have done to him. He's angry he fell for their ploy with Ben, getting him to go with them willingly.

Tom learns that Rick didn't make it, but she tells him not to worry about Ben, he hates the skitters. She says his crusty skin is spreading but she needs an x-ray to be sure of the effects.

Jamil checks out a bridge. Hal gets busted checking out Maggie's butt. Ben

still feels guilty for accidentally shooting his dad.

A beamer flies overhead. Dai shoots at it with a really big gun and hits it, but shrapnel also takes out a piece of the bridge they were hoping to cross.

At camp, Weaver briefs Tom on what he missed. Ben found a soft spot in their lines when the skitters surrounded them in Fitchburg; but they still lost more than 100 people. Now they aliens are surrounding the resistance again.

Weaver is eager to have Tom's input again. But Tom is reluctant to take up arms. "I don't trust myself, and you shouldn't either," Tom says.

Lourdes fixes a gouge in Pope's hand. Pope wants to know what happened to Tom, but she has no info.

The scouts return and take people out to the damaged bridge. They try to figure how to get across the four foot missing section. Jamil has a boat but Tom thinks that'd take too long.

Tom and Jamil come up with a plan to patch the bridge. They need a scout to check the other side. Ben offers to swim across.

Back at camp, Hal explains to his dad that Ben can run for miles without breaking a sweat.

Tom tells Hal he can't remember big chunks of time from when the aliens had him. He asks Hal to promise to watch him and stop him if he does anything strange, by any means necessary.

He doesn't want to hurt any of the boys. Matt hears outside the tent. Tom starts yelling at Hall and blood comes from his eyes. He collapses.

Anne looks at him. She looks in his eye and sees a tiny swimming wormy thing. Weaver holds him down as Anne pulls it from his eyeball and puts it in a specimen jar. It snaps curls up from a wormy shape to a hard, almost metal ball.

Late at night, Ben easily swims across the river as Jimmy waits on the bank for his signal.

Tom, Weaver, Jamil and Anne debate what to do about the parasite they took out of Tom. Tom wants them to put him in restraints until they're across the river.

Ben looks around in the woods and finds the wreckage of the flying skitter. Its radio frequencies start squealing in his head. He finds the core and snaps a picture of it then stamps it until its dead.

He follows the path the hit beamer took until he finds a giant alien structure set up in a clearing. He snaps pictures.

The next day, Matt doesn't want to see his dad.

Pope comes looking for information. He doesn't think Tom should go across the river with them. He draws on Weaver and Hal, but backs down when Anthony joins them.

"Don't kid yourself, captain. Sooner or later you're going to have to deal with that human lojack you got in there," Pope says.

Ben visits his dad. He can relate to the nightmares Tom is having. Ben's secret to keep them from controlling him is hate. He thinks he's a freak. He shows his dad his spine, which is covered in crusty spots where the harness was. Tom tells him hate is strong but it was his love for his boys that kept him going.

Ben reports his scout findings. When Jamil asks him if he heard any frequencies, Ben lies and says no. They make plans to take out the structure, figuring it's a communications tower.

Pope and the Berserkers mount up to take on any mechs that try to follow them across the river.

Hal and Maggie flirt as Lourdes wishes Jamil good luck and sends him off with a kiss.

Matt is reluctant to ride on the med bus with his dad, whom he now doesn't trust. In the bus, no one notices as the alien worm from Tom's eye unrolls, cuts its way out of the specimen jar and crawls all over Lourdes before sprouting tiny wings and flying away.

Under cover of darkness, Hal, Maggie, Ben and Dai take the boat across the river. The rest of 2nd Mass waits on the other side as Jamil oversees putting the bridge patch in place.

Ben leads his group through the forest toward the communication tower. Maggie notices the stomped on beamer. Ben and the group reach the communications tower as Jamil and the men prepare to blow the bridge once everyone's safely across.

On the bus, Tom tries to reassure Matt he's OK and he still feels like himself. He's not entirely convincing since he's handcuffed.

Hal and his team hear Pope and his team start firing on the mechs, which means they're near the teams on the bridge. Ben holds his head as the frequency hurts his ears, but tells Hal it's nothing. They watch a few beamers take flight.

Dai runs down the hill to get a closer shot at the communications tower.

On the bridge, they fire at the beamers overhead.

Dai hits the tower signal squarely.

With no signal to guide them, the beamers head back to the mothership.

Pope tells Weaver the mechs are coming and Anne slowly drives the bus over the patch. It breaks in one spot and she gets stuck. On the bus, Tom tells Matt to forget what he said and cut him loose.

Anne doesn't want to leave the wounded on the bus.

After some hesitation, Matt frees Tom and he runs straight for the big gun to fire on the skitters and mechs. Matt follows, with an automatic weapon, taking out a skitter. Tom gives his totting eight-year-old son a nod of approval, but shoos him away from the fighting.

The troops push the bus across the bridge. Everyone makes it to safety, but Tom stays behind, firing on the skitters and mechs. Weaver shouts at him to get out of there so they can blow the bridge.

Tom runs toward them with skitters right on his heels, telling them to blow it. They all wait to give Tom the best chance, but finally Pope grabs the detonator and blows it. Tom is lost in the



explosion but it looks like he hits the water. Everyone thinks he got caught in it and Weaver yells at them to get moving.

Safely on the other side, Weaver tells Hal that as soon as they're at the next camp, they're going back with a search party. They lost three vehicles, a food truck and six fighters.

Maggie reports an abandoned airport five miles away, a good base.

Matt feels bad for being afraid of his dad. Pope tries to tell Hal that what Tom did was brave, but Hal slugs him, saying Pope saw a chance to frag him and he took it.

They're arguing when Tom comes sloshing up out of the river.

Back on the bus, Lourdes notices the parasite is gone from the jar.

It flies away and finds Red Eye the skitter. It lands on its face and crawls in Red Eye's good eye.



## Compass

Season 2  
Episode Number: 13  
Season Episode: 3

Originally aired: Sunday June 24, 2012  
Writer: Bryan Oh  
Director: Michael Katleman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Caitlin Cromwell (Mother), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass moves into an airport hangar but the situation gives Anne reason to worry about the health of the group. Meanwhile Pope and The Berserkers hatch a plan to deal with Tom.



Jimmy and Ben head out on patrol at night and come upon a skitter. Jimmy knocks it down with a single shot. They walk over to inspect and it pops up and tries to attack Jimmy – Ben grabs it and stabs it easily, enjoying the kill.

Tom checks on sleeping Matt back at camp, he insisted on sleeping with his shotgun, but Hal assures his dad it's not loaded.

They've been in the airport hangar for a week and Anne is worried it's a breeding ground for disease. Tom wants to convince Weaver it's time to move out. She shows him her calendar – she marks off

every day as another they're still alive.

Tom finds Weaver, their recon has spotted skitter patrols trolling for them. Weaver wants to go to the Catskills to hole up for the winter. Tom argues the aliens will think they're surrendering if they hole up. Weaver takes note, but sticks with the Catskills plan.

Tom heads outside the hanger and hears a noise and goes to investigate. He finds Pope and is soon ambushed by his Berserkers. "Let's get this alien stooge out of here before he causes any real damage," Pope says.

They take Tom into the woods where Pope gives him the option of leaving. Pope thinks people are creeped out by Tom's triumphant return from the aliens.

Pope is shoving Tom when suddenly Ben comes out of the darkness and holds a knife to Pope's throat to get his people to back down. Jimmy fires a warning shot. They free Tom and head back to camp.

Back at the hangar, Weaver interrogates Anthony to make sure he wasn't in on Pope's plan. Weaver wants to leave Pope and his people all behind but Tom argues that they need every fighter they can get. Tom concedes that they can't be sure what the aliens did to him. He suggests he join Pope's Berserkers to keep an eye on them.

They break the news to Pope, who reminds Weaver that he's not the enemy.

Out on patrol at night, Jimmy and Ben see a group of skitters, including Red Eye just sort of lurking in the woods. Jimmy stole a flaming round from the Berserkers and uses it to light two

of them up. Ben rushes Red Eye but gets knocked down. Red Eye bashes Jimmy into a tree and Ben rises up to take him on. But Red Eye raises a, uh, hand and freezes Ben in his tracks. His harness ports glow blue and he's immobilized. Red Eye seems to talk to him, then he releases him and leaves.

Ben notices that Jimmy is skewered on a tree branch.

Ben brings Jimmy back to camp with the branch through his gut. Weaver and Tom demand to know what he was up to and are angry when he says he was hunting skitters.

Tom and Weaver take turns blaming themselves.

Tom and the Berserkers sweep the area to make sure there aren't any more skitters nearby. They find Jimmy's gun and compass and take cover when they hear noises. Two skitters come into the clearing and Tom overrules Pope's orders to fire. A mech joins them and picks up the carcasses and carries them off. Tom gets credit for keeping them from danger by firing. Pope is annoyed.

In the hangar, Hal is annoyed with his younger brother. Maggie tries to convince Hal to cut Ben some slack. Jimmy is still in surgery.

Tom gives Ben Jimmy's compass. Anne tells them she's done all she can for Jimmy. Ben takes off. Hal suggests his dad not try to follow.

They're interrupted by the noise of a byplane overhead. It lands and the female pilot Avery Churchill introduces herself. She's been looking for the 2nd Mass. She and four other pilots left South Carolina looking for survivors. She has orders from the new Continental Congress elected by 3,000 people in Charleston. The aliens' radar can't detect the plane because it's made out of fiberglass and cloth. She wants them to come to Charleston to join the resistance.

They've made contact with other parts of the world and her mission is to head on to Greenland and then Europe.

Weaver is suspicious and suggests she stay with them until they relocate, so she can't give away their position. Tom thinks Charleston sounds a lot better than the Catskills.

Tom finds Ben at Jimmy's bedside, blaming himself. Tom tries to reassure him.

In the hangar, Avery talks to the people selling the idea of Charleston. Weaver still isn't sold and asks Jamil to find snow tires for the mountain passes. Avery tells Tom they need people like him in Charleston.

Ben comes to get Anne, Jimmy's not breathing. She can't find a pulse and starts CPR. It has no effect. Jimmy's gone.

Weaver goes to dig a grave and Avery finds him. She tells him his people trust him and he should lead them to Charleston.

Tom and Ben prepare Jimmy to be buried. Ben is upset when he can't find Jimmy compass.

Tom finds Pope, who is kicking back drinking beer and has no plans to go to Jimmy's funeral, an "incredibly empty gesture."

Tom notices Pope has Jimmy's compass around his neck and gets angry. Pope taunts him, telling him to come get it. Tom charges him and they start brawling. Pope throws him into a car windshield but Tom gets up and takes him on again and starts wailing on him. Finally, one of Pope's guys breaks it up. Tom walks away with the compass.

They take the dispute to Weaver, who isn't inclined to do anything about it. Pope tells Tom he should have killed him when he had the chance. Pope threatens to leave and Weaver shows him the door. Pope's Berserkers don't follow, but Anthony volunteers to go with him. He feels indebted to Pope for saving his life, plus he tells Weaver someone has to make sure he doesn't double back.

Anne finds Tom tending to his wounds. He disturbed that he snapped and nearly killed Pope. They have a moment and Tom leans and kisses her. Anne's upset – it's her son's birthday. All she wanted was for no one to die on this birthday.

At the funeral, Tom gives Ben the compass. Weaver gives a eulogy about Jimmy turning into a good soldier and dying a hero. Hal tries to comfort Ben.

Later, Weaver stands over Jimmy's grave as Avery takes off. Ben joins him, returning the compass Weaver gave Jimmy. "He was a good soldier, that boy, but he had no sense of direction," Weaver says. Ben fights off tears and tells Weaver he's sorry.

Anne marks another day off on the calendar.

Weaver and Tom prepare to head out – to Charleston. There are 176 people left out of the 300 they had when they started. Weaver wants to get back in the war.

Ben kneels in the dark at Jimmy's gravesite. He gets up to leave and nearly walks into Red Eye the skitter. He leans over Ben and Ben's harness knobs glow again. Hal's bike roars in the distance and Red Eye runs off. Ben tells Hal he's fine.



## Young Bloods

Season 2

Episode Number: 14

Season Episode: 4

Originally aired: Sunday July 1, 2012  
Writer: Heather V. Regnier  
Director: Miguel Sapochnik  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Guest Stars: Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Hector Bucio (Diego), Billy Wickman (Boon), Evan Bird (Jonny), Connor Christopher Levins (Julian)  
Summary: Ben and Hal go on patrol and help a boy, only to have their bikes stolen. The subsequent search for the bikes leads to a major discovery. Meanwhile, Matt steps into a dangerous situation; and Weaver reconnects with a family member.



Matt zips through the city streets on a scooter. Skitters track him. He finds himself trapped in an alley as two of them close in on him.

From up above, two of the Berserkers, Tector and Boone, blast the aliens with a giant caliber gun. Matt is covered in blood, but he loved it. "That was awesome!" he says.

Out on recon, Hal and Ben find the aliens are using a warehouse, with power. Hal tries to get his brother to talk, but Ben clams up. As they're talking, two people steal their motorcycles and take off. Ben can hear which way they're headed

with his super alien hearing.

Back at camp, Tom presents Anne with junk food. They found a Korean grocery store and have food for a week. They take advantage of the alone time to do some making out.

They're interrupted by Lourdes.

Ben and Hal approach a burned out warehouse and hear voices. They split up. There are 15 disaffected youth inside. A kid named Diego is their leader. Hal walks in unarmed as Ben aims at the leader from above. The youths drop their guns.

Hal realizes there aren't any adults there. He offers them food and water and bike parts. Diego and some of the kids go with them.

Matt hangs out with the guys he went on patrol with and Tom finds them. He keeps them from giving the nine-year-old beer. Tom learns they used Matt as bait and is pissed. He takes their gun, and takes them off sniper duty and puts them on sanitation. Matt yells at his dad for ruining everything.

Hal and Ben come back with the kids. One of the girls gets off the bike and heads straight for Weaver. He's her dad.

Jeannie and her dad catch up. Her mom died of a stroke after she ran out of her blood pressure pills. Weaver tells his daughter that he came looking for them.

Diego and Hal talk about the area as Matt plays soccer with the kids. Tom invites them to come to Charleston with them.

Diego rounds everybody up and comes to check on Jeannie. He's her boyfriend

Lourdes hears Diego speaking Spanish and goes to talk to him, asking about the area of Mexico where her family is from. He tells her it was destroyed. Jamil sees she's upset but she won't talk to him.

Weaver hates to say good bye to his daughter even for a little while as they run to bring supplies to the kids.

Diego and the kids find a truck burning outside their hideout. It's trashed inside and they find blood. They hear someone crying in the corner. The skitters took all the kids.

Back at 2nd Mass camp, they figure the factory they saw might be a harness factory. Weaver tries to formulate a plan but Diego thinks they're wasting time. Weaver barks at him to wait and Diego tells him he doesn't take orders from a man who "couldn't save his own family."

Jeannie has to break up her dad and boyfriend. She says he's the same angry control freak "this is exactly why mom kicked you out."

Diego and his kids head out. He invites Matt to go with him.

Weaver leads his people out. Tom tells Ben he can sit the mission out and avoid going to a harness factory.

Weaver thinks his daughter was right about him and Tom urges him to talk to her. Tector asks to be allowed to go and Tom lets him.

They discover the kids and Matt went without them.

Outside the factory, they see Matt's baseball hat on the ground. They prepare to go in.

Matt wakes up strapped to a stretcher surrounded by the other kids. Some already have harnesses. Weaver's daughter Jeannie is there, too.

A skitter inspects the kids. A girl screams in the distance.

A wormlike thing comes out of a tank and slithers on a conveyor onto a boy's back. It releases spines into his back and locks down, turning from all organic to partly metal.

Diego and the other kids are held in a room, bound on the ground. Maggie and Hal find them.

The skitter moves on to Matt and another worm comes out of the tank. It's sliding on to Matt's back when Tom and Weaver come around the corner shooting. It's about to clamp down on Matt when Tom pulls it off and blasts it. Weaver frees his daughter who immediately apologizes.

Ben is suddenly mesmerized by the tank full of harness worms. He puts his hand on the glass and his harness ports glow blue. Hal sees. Ben shoots the tank and they pour out. Maggie and Diego lead the other kids with Tector and Dai.

The rest of the group takes garget practice at the worms. They're preparing to leave when a worm latches on to Weaver's leg. Jeannie helps pry it off. They get the harnessed boy and leave.

Back at camp, Anne gives Weaver antibiotics for his leg. Jean checks on her dad. He tells her he knows he let her down before and he wants to make it up to her. But she's not angry. She says he wasn't the best dad, but he is a great leader. He tells her he wants to change - for her.

The kids are planning to leave. They don't want to be part of the resistance and they just want to find somewhere to hole up. She doesn't want to say good bye to Diego. Tom gives her the compass he always meant to give her.

Hal checks on Ben. He asks Ben about his glowing spokes. Ben denies it. He's ignoring the problem. He tells Hal to back off.

Tector reports to Tom and picks up laundry. Appreciative of his efforts to save Matt and the kids, Tom puts him back on sniper duty.

Jamil finds Lourdes alone in her bunk. She tells him about her aunt and uncle in Mexico. He tells her it's normal to be upset, she just has to start to hope for new good things.

Jean covers her dad with a blanket and leaves him a note saying she's not coming with them to Charleston. She doesn't want to give up her life with Diego and the other kids, they need her like the 2nd Mass needs him.

Jean gets on Diego's bike and rides off.

Matt climbs into bed with his dad; Lourdes holds onto Jamil. Everyone trying to find a new home in the world.



## Love and other Acts of Courage

Season 2  
Episode Number: 15  
Season Episode: 5

Originally aired: Sunday July 08, 2012  
Writer: Joe Weisberg  
Director: John Dahl  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Billy Wickman (Boon)  
Summary: A skitter is captured and imprisoned at the camp, Hal bonds with Maggie as they discuss her past, and a familiar figure returns to the group with questionable motives.



A skitter addresses a crowd of gathered skitters, howling into the air. Red Eye responds. Ben hears the cries and runs to the roof and falls to his knees, raising his arms like the skitters.

Hal finds Maggie enjoying the skyline view. He's been keeping tabs on his "partner." Weaver wants them to scout pharmacies and hospitals. As they're talking there's a giant explosion in town.

The 2nd Mass mobilizes. Tom suggests if a resistance group is getting hit, they should help. Weaver authorizes Tom to take the Berserkers and go check it out. No one is sure where Ben is.

Tom and the Berserkers head toward the explosions and find a graveyard of smoldering skitters. There doesn't seem to be any live humans or skitters. The skitters were all killed by mechs.

Hal notices glowing blue spikes under a skitter and uncovers the person thinking it's Ben. But it's Rick, the formerly harnessed kid who wanted to be harnessed again.

Back in camp, Anne has patched up Rick's shoulder. Weaver is concerned about him as a security risk. Anne notices Weaver wincing. His leg wound is healing slowly and he needs new antibiotics.

Back at camp, they still can't find Ben. Hal tells Tom about Ben's spikes glowing at the harnessing facility.

Rick wakes up on the med bus and is completely disoriented and panicked. He tells them Ben's badly hurt and in danger. He offers to show them where he is and Tom is willing to take the risk it's a trap.

Rick leads Tom, Weaver, Dai and a few others. They notice Rick's spikes glowing. Rick says: "Ben's here, too." They notice a trail of blood and go into a warehouse.

Ben is upset Rick brought Tom and everyone, but Rick says that "he" is hurt and he needs their help. Ben holds a gun on his dad and then reveals who they're talking about: it's Red Eye.

Tom remembers Red Eye tried to kill him on the ship, but through Rick, Red Eye explains he saved Tom. Both Rick and Ben want them to help Red Eye, who is injured. He tells Tom that they are fighting the same enemy.

Red Eye collapses and so does Rick. Weaver and everyone want to kill Red Eye, but Tom argues he might be good for intel.

Hal, Maggie, Tector and Crazy Lee are out on recon at a hospital for supplies when they hear a mech approaching. Hal and Maggie get in a car in the backseat and he pulls her down on top of him as they hide. The mechs stomp past.

Tom, Weaver and the rest of the group bring Red Eye back to camp, strapped to a truck. Ben tries to get people to listen to him as he argues to save Red Eye.

Tom pulls Ben aside. Ben tells him Red Eye is in charge of the skitter rebellion and he's been in communication with him since Jimmy died.

Ben explains some skitters have been able to resist the effects of the harness and they've been resisting for 100 years but never able to get anywhere. Red Eye had to go along with torturing Tom to gain access to the ship and their plans. Ben says Red Eye believes the human race is their best chance for resistance, by forming an alliance.

In the back of the car, the mechs continue clomping by Hal and Maggie. Hal remembers making out with a girl named Rita in the back of his first car. Maggie mentions Karen, Hal's harnessed former girlfriend, killing the mood.

Out of the car, she apologizes to Hal.

In camp, Rick talks to Tom for Red Eye. Tom wants to know why Ben is so important to him. Red Eye tells him there's a death squad on the way to kill Red Eye and everyone in the camp.

Hal and Tector go through another hospital and find a fully stocked pharmacy. Hal goes to get Maggie, who's not eager to go back into a hospital after her battle with cancer.

She tells Hal she had brain tumors, they did three operations. She talks about losing her will to live and getting it back. They kiss, but she gets freaked out and runs off.

Back talking to Red Eye, he mentions the 20 revolutionary skitters that died that morning. Tom doesn't buy the idea of a skitter revolution. He wants to know why they'd revolt.

"They" came to the skitters planet and turned them into slaves, infusing the chem-lock into their spines as children, the same way they've harnessed humans. They tried to fight back, but "they" were too powerful. But they've seen how humans fight back. Together they could overthrow their oppressors.

Tom still doesn't believe him, having seen skitters kill without remorse. Red Eye is willing to debate but then says the main point is that human's weapons are substandard and they don't understand the aliens tactics. "So you can join us and survive or fight alone and die," he says.

After they nap for a few hours, Hal tries to talk to Maggie, but she says nothing can happen between them. They're racing back on bikes when they start getting shot at from the sky.

Tom hears it and Red Eye tells him it's the death squad on his trail.

Maggie gets hit and Hal speeds back across to get her, taking fire. He reaches her safely and picks her up.

Back at camp, Weaver thinks the attack means Red Eye lead them straight to camp. Tom tries to talk to him, but he and the others don't want to hear it. Weaver orders Tom to stand down, but Tom won't.

Red Eye slips out of his cage and scampers up the ceiling. Someone shoots at him with a shot gun and Rick steps in front to protect him. He gets shot and Red Eye escapes.

Hal brings Maggie to Anne. Weaver tells them they're moving out. Anne looks at Maggie's wound, she's shot through the side.

Ben looks over Rick as he gasps for breath. He tells Ben to make his father and everyone believe.

The 2nd Mass packs up and moves out. They settle into the hospital. Lourdes tells Hal that there weren't any bullet fragments in Maggie and she should be OK.

Hal goes in to talk to Maggie, telling her he needs her. Maggie asks him to stay with her until she falls asleep. She takes his hand.

Anne gives Weaver a sedative. Tom comes to talk to him. Weaver is "pissed as hell" that Tom disobeyed a direct order. Tom apologizes.

Weaver is worried about Ben – not his well-being, the risk he poses to the 2nd Mass. Weaver warns him hard choices have to be made some times and asks if Tom will be able to handle it. Tom's not sure. "I'd just as soon not have to make it for you," Weaver tells him.

As Weaver's sedative kicks in, he confesses to Tom that he didn't like him much when he met him, but he respects him now.

Out in the hall, Tom is glad the hospital will give them all a chance to recharge on the way to Charleston. Tom thinks Ben is a typical teenager, wanting to change the world.

Jamil gets the hospital's generator going. Tom takes Anne by the arm and mentions the number of empty rooms around the place. They find one.

Up on the roof, Ben sits alone and looks at the stars. Matt finds him. Ben has a secret. He tells Matt he has to go away for awhile. "Is it because of that skitter?" "Something like that." He doesn't know when.



# Homecoming

Season 2  
Episode Number: 16  
Season Episode: 6

Originally aired: Sunday July 15, 2012  
Writer: Bryan Oh  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Jessy Schram (Karen), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter)  
Guest Stars: Brad Kelly (Lyle), Billy Wickman (Boon)  
Summary: Hal stumbles across bodies of de-harnessed kids and finds someone from his past. Tom and Anne grow closer. And Weaver's health deteriorates just as Tom discovers he may have been keeping important matters from the group in order to protect them.



Tom and Anne wake up in their shared room in the hospital, where they've been hunkered down for two weeks. They enjoy how almost normal it seems. Tom remembers the old days, including the smell of coffee brewing and his boys fighting and his wife breaking them up. He apologizes for bringing up his wife, but Anne understands – she had a husband, too. This is the life they have now and they're enjoying it.

Tom gets to Weaver's briefing late, expecting him to jump on him. He does, giving a mini-lecture on complacency and how they can ill afford it. Tom notices

Weaver's arm twitching, then suddenly he's flopping around like a fish. Tom looks at Weaver's skin and they see his veins are turning black. "What have those damn aliens done to me?" Weaver asks.

They bring him to Anne, who knows immediately that it's the result of the infection in his leg spreading. It's the wound from the skitter spike and Weaver forbid Anne from telling Tom.

Tom is crappy to her and yells at her for keeping the secret. He wants to get Weaver to Charleston ASAP, where a doctor might have a better idea how to help him. Anne tries not to be insulted. Tom resolves to leave for Charleston tonight.

Maggie goes on patrol despite her stitches, wanting to get out of the hospital. Hal tries again to convince her to go out with him, but she's resolved not to. She asked to be transferred to another unit.

As they're walking out in the woods they see a human foot under leaves. It's a dead child with their harness removed. There are more of them. They uncover all the bodies and check for a pulse. They're all dead except one: Karen.

Tom addresses the troops, telling them he wants to leave for Charleston tonight. Jamil points out Weaver has had him using the diesel from the trucks to power the generators, but they haven't been able to find more fuel. Worse, they only have 12 hours of the generator left.

Tom orders them to conserve the generator and sends out fuel search parties.

Hal and Maggie return with Karen, who's barely breathing. Ben warns them not to let her in, saying she's still connected to the aliens. He can hear it.

Tom orders her brought to a secure room. Later, she wakes up surrounded by Karen, Anne, Hal and Tom. Ben tells them again not to trust her.

Karen tells Tom not being able to stop the aliens from torturing him was horrible.

She only remembers being on the ship and then waking up and seeing Hal's face. She guesses that she'd served her purpose so they removed her harness. She tells them she's happy to be home. Maggie doesn't believe her.

Ben wants to stay with her, saying he has the best chance of finding if something's not right. Hal asks Ben why he's being so suspicious. Ben has never met her – she got captured trying to rescue Ben.

Ben says she'll manipulate Hal and he should stay away. Hal is angry, but Maggie thinks Ben is right.

Tom checks on Weaver and Anne says he's getting exponentially worse. She thinks the toxin in Weaver needed time to mature. Tom wants to just drive him to Charleston, but Anne doesn't think he can be moved. They get in a shouting match over whose call it is that ends when Tom accidentally calls Anne by his dead wife's name. Anne understands. They continue calmly, with her asking to have until midnight to come up with a plan and if she can't, then Tom can take him. Tom thinks the survival of the 2nd Mass depends on Weaver.

Ben sits outside Karen's room. She asks about Uncle Scott and Ben says he's dead, along with a lot of other good people killed by her "masters." She plays dumb.

He tells her he can hear her, she's still connected to them. She says she just hears a kind of static. She describes being harnessed like having a hand wrapped around her throat, moving her around like a rag doll. She says being on the mother ship was 10 times worse than being with the skitters.

Ben goes to get her more bread and Karen seems to enjoy the effect she's having on him.

Lourdes has a plan for Weaver. They noticed his temperature was dropping, which is the opposite of what happens with an infection. They think heating him might slow or stop it. They want to try a technique of pumping out his blood, heating it, and pumping it back in. They ask Jamil to build a machine to do it.

One of the fuel scouting parties comes back. They don't have fuel, but they do have Pope and Anthony. Pope's knocked out. Anthony says they got hit outside of Durham and he got them out of there but eventually collapsed. Anne says Pope has a concussion but should be fine.

Ben brings Karen more food. He mentions they're leaving, but says he doesn't know where. Karen tells him she can hear conversation far away. She also has crazy strength. She picks up her bed. He rushes over to her and tells her to put it down. When he gets close to her their spikes start glowing, they can feel what the other one is feeling. They're close to kissing when Hal comes in. Ben runs out.

Jamil has a machine rigged and ready to go but it's going to take eight hours to pump all his blood. Tom apologizes to Anne for thinking he knew better. They're talking when the power goes out in the generator. Tom works Weaver's blood pumping machine manually. Jamil brings the generator in and hooks it up.

Tector comes back with a truck bed full of fuel.

Maggie tracks down Hal. He thinks something bad is going to happen to Karen. He thinks Ben's trying to recruit her. He tells her what happened between Karen and Ben.

Maggie takes it to mean the opposite and tells Hal to find Ben because if anyone's in danger, it's him.

Maggie goes to the room where Karen is being held and relieves the guard. She goes in and pulls guns on Karen and tells her to quit pretending.

Karen turns the tables on her, saying she doesn't deserve Hal. She keeps taunting Maggie until she fires. Karen runs up a wall and flips over Maggie's head, kicking her to the ground. Karen is standing over Maggie when she hears Ben approaching. She throws herself against a wall for effect and, with Maggie unconscious, tells him that Maggie tried to shoot her and they (Karen and Ben) aren't safe here.

Ben says he knows a place where they'll be accepted, but they have to leave. Ben shows Karen to the stairs and they run up to the roof.

Hal follows them up there, telling Ben to come with him. Ben says they need to leave for their protection and for the 2nd Mass. Ben walks toward Hal and grabs him around the neck, knocking him out. Karen says she's sorry it came to this.

Ben and Karen stare out into the darkness off the roof. Their spikes glow. He takes her hand and they jump off the top of the four stories and run into the woods.

Inside, Weaver seems to be getting better. He's breathing on his own and his temperature is getting back to normal. But Anne has no way of knowing what other damage was done.

Tom worries about what to do about the lack of fuel, food and ammunition. Anne assures him they'll get through it together. Weaver wakes up. "How much fuel did we burn saving my sorry ass?" he asks.

Pope is awake and asking for Tom. He says it's life and death. Tom visits Pope, who is fighting to get out of bed. He says the aliens are on their way to get Ben. Pope ran into a bunch of them and a blonde girl was talking for them. They realize he's talking about Karen.

They wanted to know where to find Ben and there was some talk of a skitter rebellion. That was at least two days ago.

Tom races off to find Karen, and finds Maggie bleeding on the floor. He finds Hal unconscious on the roof.

Ben and Karen run through the woods, their spikes glowing.





## Molon Labe

Season 2

Episode Number: 17

Season Episode: 7

Originally aired: Sunday July 22, 2012  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle  
Director: Holly Dale  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Brad Kelly (Lyle), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Brandon Jay McLaren (Jamil Dexter), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Jessy Schram (Karen)  
Guest Stars: Billy Wickman (Boon), Colin Cunningham (John Pope)  
Summary: Tom lands himself another captive and Ben is lead into danger at the hand of someone he trusts. The unit faces a brand new enemy while trapped in the basement of a building.



Ben takes Karen into the woods and tells her about the group of skitters who've been able to resist their harnesses. He says they've started rebelling against their overlords. He explains that they started contacting him through his spikes. Karen tells Ben she saw a lot of stuff when she was harnessed. Soon they're confronted by skitters, and they're not rebels.

"They're with us," Karen says, before declaring to the leader, "It's as you predicted. He's been in contact with the rebel leader." Ben is stunned and realizes he's been double crossed.

Karen prepares to harness Ben in a seductive kind of way, telling him there's so much she wants to teach and show him. But before the connection can be made, shots are fired from the trees and a shootout between the militia, led by Tom, and the skitters ensues. Soon enough, the leader is at the end Tom's shotgun and the men realize it's a pretty important prisoner.

"Then, I guess you're coming with us," Tom says.

Matt watches from a window nearby while Maggie gets treated for the wound on her stomach. Anne tells Maggie to take it easy. Captain Weaver is up and out of bed against orders in preparation for the trip to Charleston, and he's not appreciative of everyone's concern for why he's out of bed. Captain Weaver isn't wild about Tom's new captive, but Tom says they can take the alien with them to Charleston.

Another shootout starts and Weaver worries it's a distraction so other aliens can sneak in the back door of their hideout building. Tom goes to check it out and finds himself in a one-on-one battle with a mech. He uses a smart combination of a lantern and a gunshot at some propane tanks to take it out and cause a huge explosion throughout the building.

The explosion has settled the aliens down, and Weaver tells Tom that they can't protect Ben anymore. Weaver says everyone's being put at risk because of what Ben has brought down on them. Tom says that's not fair, but Weaver tells him he'd agree if Ben wasn't the one involved.

Karen raises a white flag and calls out to Tom. She demands that the militia release her overlord and they're all free to go. But if they don't, "things can only get worse and none of us wants that to happen." Tom meets Karen face to face and he tells her she can't have Ben. She says that's clear. Tom demands that Karen pull her forces back before they'll let him go. Karen warns Tom that if he won't listen to her then he can "talk to him," and tells Tom that he's spoken to "him" when Tom and Karen were aboard the overlord's ship. Tom has his back turned to Karen and his face momentarily freezes as he continues to walk away from her.

Inside the hospital, Matt, Anne and Lourdes are reeling from the explosion, but none of them is injured.

Weaver tells Tom they can't trust Karen to keep a deal if they make one with her. Weaver sends Tector out to pick a team and recon alien positions. Weaver talks to Jamil about finding a way out of the hospital.

Ben tells Hal he feels bad about everything that's happening because of him. Ben and Tom then get into a shouting match about Ben saying he needs to leave the Second Mass and Tom insisting that he come with them to Charleston. Ben insists that he needs to fight because he's Tom's son and because of the overlord trying to get the information Ben has through his spikes. Ben tells Tom he's not sure how much longer he can fend the overlord off.

Anne, Lourdes and Matt find Jamil in the basement of the hospital badly wounded and twitching. Matt goes to reach for a door handle and Jamil shouts, "No!" Matt leaves the door alone, but now everyone is worried about what's behind it.

Hal and Maggie find a hatch door to a tunnel, but it doesn't open easily. While he tries to open it, Maggie asks about whether Hal still thinks about Karen and whether he's still in love with her. He admits it's strange to see her and think it's the same person he used to hold and kiss. He wishes his could get his brain to stop thinking about her, and Maggie plants a huge kiss on him. He wonders what happened to her "I'm not the right person for you" feeling. She says she changed her mind "just like that." The hatch door finally opens, but a bunch of insect-like alien creatures rush toward the newly open door. Hal and Maggie slam the door shut and avoid the onslaught, but one hops out and Hal aims to smash it immediately.

Matt notices new holes in the door that he'd been about to open and Anne pulls him away from it. Suddenly, more of the creepy alien insects start coming out of Jamil's mouth. Anne, Lourdes and Matt run for shelter and look for another way out.

Hal shows Tom and Weaver the insect thing and says he had to hit it about 15 times to kill it. The group heads out to find Anne, Lourdes and Matt. Colin offers to help but Tom is skeptical.

Weaver hears a gunfight in the distance and he and other realize it's Boon and Tyree's guns they're hearing. All they can do is listen for hints that Boon and Tyree are moving around successfully.

Matt, Anne and Lourdes find a vent and Matt volunteers to crawl through to try to find an opening. Anne tells him to send the message, if he finds anyone, that they're holed up in the blood lab.

Karen stands outside the hospital calling out again for Captain Weaver, and he responds.

In the blood lab, Anne tries to reassure Lourdes that they're going to be OK.

Tom and Colin walk together and hear a noise from a vent. Colin is about to shoot, thinking more critters are inside, but Tom hears Matt's whimper and Colin holds his gun up. Tom opens the vent to pull Matt out, and Matt says the critters are after him. Tom takes Matt away while Colin stays behind to blast some rounds into the vent.

Karen calls out to Captain Weaver and tells him one of his fighters has a message for him. It's Boon. Karen appears to let Boon free to run back to the militia, but as Boon runs toward his people, a mech squares him up in his sights, shoots him several times from behind and everyone watches Boon collapse to his death. Karen calls out to Captain Weaver to "consider it a warning you're out of time."

Lourdes and Anne create a makeshift blowtorch to burn up some critters just as Tom and the gang arrive to bring them back to safety. Captain Weaver hears that Jamil didn't make it, and tells Lourdes he's sorry. She leaves without saying anything. Tom takes off to go pay a visit to their "honored guest" while Weaver sends Hal, Tector and Maggie back to the front of the line.

Tom barges into the overlord's cage and has an intense conversation with him, through Ben, who is translating the overlord's thoughts through his spikes. The overlord says he wants "peace," and that if they'd come to commit genocide, everyone would already be dead. He says the aliens

are there as a correction, trying to save the planet from hurting itself. The overlord says that once their task has been completed they will move on. Tom asks, "What task?" That's not of his concern. Tom mentions the rebellion and the overlord says they'll be defeated. Tom says the militia will continue to wear down the aliens every day, but the overlord says Tom and his men lack the strength, adding that they're "crippled by sentiment." Ben says, "Case in point" before losing his breath and falling to the ground. Tom kneels down to tend to his son and asks the overlord to stop whatever he's doing to Ben. "Please!" he shouts.

Ben recaptures his breath and says, on behalf of the overlord, "Sentiment. Weakness. You are in over your head, Tom Mason. Now release me before it's too late."

Tom says, "I understand now," and fires a single shot right into the overlord's chest, sending him crumbling to the ground.

Weaver reports to Tom that Anne is trying to fix the hole in the overlord's chest, but it's not looking good. Tom apologizes and explains he was trying to save Ben, but Weaver says they can't let their emotions get the better of them. Then he admits it's "easier said than done."

Weaver and Tom theorize about why the overlord took such a big risk to get close to Ben, and Tom tells Weaver he thinks the rebellion uprising is real. Weaver also wonders what they're going to tell Karen, who will find out "sooner or later" that her boss is bleeding out in their psych ward. Tom suggest they let her know sooner than later.

Hal escorts Karen into the hospital to see her overlord, and she goes on about how enlightened she is and how everything works together as the result of something else. She boasts about the way she managed to get Ben to run away with her. She smugly tells Hal about the adjustments she occasionally needs to make, and says, "Now you're handing my master over to me." Soon enough, she sees that her overlord is dying. She gets the explanation that the whole building is wired with explosives that will go off if Karen tries to leave the hospital before the 2nd Mass has evacuated and left for Charleston. Once they're clear, Tom explains, she can leave and possibly even save her overlord's life.

Everyone boards busses and Tom looks up to see a mech watching over them but not shooting. Tom tells Matt he's proud of what he did in the basement and Matt replies, "Just doing my job."

The next morning, Weaver lays out the plan to get to Charleston, 500 miles. Everyone is excited about all the great stuff that awaits in Charleston. In the bus, Anne overreacts to a spider on her hand. She stomps it repeatedly and Tom comes in to tell her he thinks she got it. He says he doesn't even want to think of how close he came to losing her, and they hug.

Lourdes is upset about losing Jamil, but she's treating patients again. She tells Anne they need treatment regardless of how she feels. She goes on to tell Anne that she doesn't need to talk about it, and it doesn't matter if you have a good or bad attitude. "Soon or later, something bad will happen to you," Lourdes says. "All we have to do is wait."

Tom finds Ben standing nearby as the busses get loaded up for the trip. Ben tells Tom that he wants to find other skitter rebels and fight with them. Ben asks his dad for luck as they shake hands. Tom tells Ben the story of how he and his mother dropped Ben off for his first day at preschool and Ben bawled when he realized they were leaving him there. Tom says walking away was the longest walk of his life. He says he looked back and saw Ben's face against the window, crying his eyes out. Ben hugs his dad and promises him they'll see each other again. Ben walks off while Tom watches and Weaver calls out that it's time to go.



## Death March

Season 2

Episode Number: 18

Season Episode: 8

Originally aired: Sunday August 5, 2012  
Writer: Heather V. Regnier  
Director: Seith Mann  
Show Stars: Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Will Patton (Weaver), Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai)  
Recurring Role: Ryan Robbins (Tector), Dale Dye (Jim Porter)  
Guest Stars: Olivia Steele-Falconer (Jenny)  
Summary: En route to Charleston, the 2nd Mass continues to grieve for the group's recent losses. Matt bonds with a new harnessed girl and Weaver learns more about Tector's history.



On the road to Charleston at night, Tom thinks about saying good-bye to Ben.

He wished him luck and hugged him. Ben assured his dad it'd be OK and they'd see each other again. Then he walked away.

Back on the bus, Tom doesn't want to stop even though Anthony says they're low on fuel. Matt gives his dad his will, because everyone's saying they're not going to make it to Charleston.

In another truck, Tector drives for Weaver.

Hal drives with Maggie, with Pope in

the back. "All this Beer Duty is starting to take its toll on me," he announces. But they can't stop til they run out of fuel.

Maggie says she is ready to kill Pope and Hal assures her he's thought about it. She doesn't think he has that darkness in him.

In the medical truck, Lourdes is having a hard time focusing on the patient. Tom has a blister, but doesn't bother Anne with it.

Weaver notices Tector avoids the word "sir," but he can tell from his skill with a weapon that he has a military background. They're about to talk about it when the truck hits something. It's a harnessed young girl.

Anne looks her over. Her harness isn't glowing, so Anne thinks it's damaged. Weaver wants to leave her in case she's a spy. She wakes up and asks about her brother Tyler. Weaver decides to lock her up in the back.

Hal hopes Ben is waiting for them in Charleston. Maggie tells him to trust in fate, noting how much her life has changed for the better. Their truck starts to overheat. Pope tells them to keep going, he knows there's a river up ahead – he used to take the road to visit his kids in Florida.

On the med bus, Tom wonders what will happen to the kids who have been harnessed. Matt goes to get a look at the girl, who has scales starting to grow on her face. He brings her food and mentions his brother was harnessed. He offers his hand and she extends her, which is already half alien, webbed with long fingers and nails.

Hal pulls the scout truck over and worries what will happen to the others without them in front looking out. Pope says the radiator hose has a hole and sends Hal for water. Maggie stays behind to watch him. "What's going to happen when he finds out the truth about you? About who and what you really are, what then?" Pope asks Maggie.

In the med bus, Anne passes a sign saying they're 146 miles outside of Charleston. The water tank is about a third empty from a leak. Tom tries to fix it and yowls in pain. Lourdes hovers over Jamil's tools, collecting them.

Stopped on the side of the road, Pope tells Maggie that people like them don't belong in Charleston. She thinks nothing good comes from Hal finding out about her past, but Pope urges her to tell the truth.

Ben talks to Jenny the harnessed girl. She explains Tyler and some others kids became her siblings when they were "joined to the same guardian." They were all killed by humans. She says she loves her guardian, she took care of her. Ben tells her the 2nd Mass can be her family. She asks what's in Charleston.

Weaver continues interrogating Tector and figures out he was a Marine. He admits to being a gunnery sergeant who served in Iraq and Afghanistan. Weaver wants to get Tector a leadership role, but Tector plans to leave after Charleston. He doesn't want to talk about it.

Ben tells Jenny all about Charleston, reading from his journal. He wants her to come so he'll have a friend. She thinks people won't accept her.

Jenny starts to feel something and then says that she can feel Tyler near. A skitter jumps on the side of the bus. They pull over to inspect but don't see anything.

Pope gets the truck started again. Hal tries to figure out what route the convoy would have taken. He drops hints at Maggie to fess up. Hal tries to ask Maggie about it. She tells him when she got out of the hospital, she got overwhelmed and wanted to get away from everything. She got into drugs and stealing to support her habit. She got caught and ended up in prison. She had a baby boy in prison, but the state took him away.

Pulled over, Tom notices they've seen no sign of Hal, Maggie or Pope for 250 miles. Weaver promises they'll circle back after they reach Charleston.

Back on the truck, "Tyler" jumps on the bus again, Jenny's harness lights up and she easily breaks her chains. She tells Matt she has to go. She knocks him over and runs off the bus, harness glowing into the night.

Back on the road, Tom checks on Matt, who has a bump on his head. Tom explains Ben is only with the rebel skitters so he can fight with them to protect his family. Matt's worried Ben might not come back. He writes in his journal.

Lourdes goes to check on their severely dehydrated patient and realizes he's dead. Lourdes is not handling things well.

Maggie prods Hal for a reaction to her news. He wants time to think. Suddenly there's a bright white light in front of them. Hal slams on the breaks.

Weaver thinks Tector feels guilty over Boone's death. He tells Weaver about leading his patrol into an ambush in Afghanistan. Weaver start yelling at him that he killed those men, and Boone, then says of course it's not his fault. The enemy killed those people.

Weaver knows what it's like to lose people. He contemplated leaving after they lost all those people in Fitchburg, but he knew he couldn't desert his people.

Suddenly, the whole convoy stops.

Lourdes apologizes to Anne, saying she's just still mad. Tom and Weaver and the rest go to inspect Charleston. The main bridge into town is destroyed. The city is in ruins, bombed beyond recognition. They take it all in, realizing their dream is dead.

On the med bus, they try to cope with a day of failures. Tom was so sure Charleston was real, he knew how badly they needed it. "I don't know where Hal is and I don't think I'm ever going to see Ben again, and my nine-year-old just made out his will," Tom says. Anne tries to convince him not to lose hope.

Weaver tries to figure out what to do next. Tector tells him his people need him, even if Weaver doesn't know what to say to them. "I respectfully suggest you make something up, sir," Tector says, saluting him.

Weaver fires a shot into the air to get everyone's attention. He tells people he should have known better, but now they have to work harder to make the dream happen. He tells everyone they're going to get back in the vehicles and forge on.

They hear a rustling in the woods. It's Col. Jim Porter from the First Continental army. He heard the shot. He presents Weaver with a bag of strawberries. He tells Tom there's a legend building around him.

The strawberries came from the new capital of the U.S., Charleston. Porter explains that looks can be deceiving. Hal and Maggie are with him. Hal's confident they'll see Ben again; he thinks fate owes them.





## The Price of Greatness

Season 2

Episode Number: 19

Season Episode: 9

Originally aired:	Sunday August 12, 2012
Writer:	Mark Verheiden
Director:	Adam Kane
Show Stars:	Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Will Patton (Weaver)
Recurring Role:	Dale Dye (Porter), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee)
Guest Stars:	Terry O'Quinn (Arthur Manchester), Brad Dryborough (Doctor), Cainan Wiebe (Marshall), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Ty Olsson (Sgt. Clemmons), Matt Frewer (General Bressler)
Summary:	Tector makes the decision to embrace his military past, while Maggie becomes suspicious that Pope will be leaving the group. The 2nd Mass continue to meet new people along the way, as Tom runs into a former untrustworthy mentor.



Col. Porter leads the 2nd Mass to the new headquarters. It's an underground mall that looks destroyed from the outside.

They walk down the escalators and see a giant American flag and hundreds of people waiting for them. They're greeted with cheers and hot food.

Weaver runs into his daughter, Jean. She says things with her boyfriend "got all messed up" when they left.

Pope assures his Berserkers that he plans to leave soon.

Matt is excited that there might be school.

Tom is spotted by Arthur Manchester (Terry O'Quinn), the former head of Boston College's History Department. Tom took all his classes. He's the new "majority leader, 'President' felt presumptuous."

Tom gives Arthur a list of all the people in the 2nd Mass and their assignments. Arthur promises to find them some housing and real beds.

Captain Weaver and Tector go to meet General Bressler (Matt Frewer). Weaver is surprised when Tector gives his old Marine Corps rank.

Bressler offers them a drink.

Weaver goes to the map and tells Bressler where they've spotted aliens. He offers their scouts, but Bressler says they won't be needed and dismisses Porter.

Bressler explains that the aliens think Charleston has been conquered and so the civilian authority has decided not to engage the aliens and give them any reason to come back. Bressler explains that Manchester began building power early and earned a loyal following.

Weaver is taking this all in when Hal comes running.

They find Tom in the middle of a group of people shouting. Tom is face to face with a member of the army named Clemons, who has orders to take the 2nd Mass' weapons and split them up in different housing units.

Porter explains that they store weapons in one place and issue according to mission, but he'll back down if Weaver tells him to.

Weaver agrees with Porter and Tom goes along, saying they have to start thinking beyond the 2nd Mass. They turn over their weapons.

Tom wakes up in a real bed with sheets in his room with Anne. They get a delivery of the South Carolina Gazette and an invitation from Manchester. Anne is assigned to the medical shop with Lourdes.

Tom visits Manchester, whose office is stacked with books. He even has fresh tomatoes from their hydroponic garden.

Manchester has visions of a new government, from the ground up. He wants a new political system, for a post-invasion world. He compares them to Washington and Jefferson.

Manchester explains there's a confidence vote on his leadership tomorrow and he wants Tom to stand with him.

Tom tells him about the rebel aliens and suggests they ally with them. Manchester tells him not to say another word because it would induce panic.

Weaver finds his daughter working the chow line. He asks again what happened with Diego. A skitter patrol ambushed them and they scattered, but Diego and the rest never made the rendezvous. She came to Charleston alone.

Manchester refused to send a patrol. She wants to say something in the meeting tomorrow, Weaver promises to back her.

Anne reports to the hospital area and meets an arrogant heart surgeon who tries to dump a bunch of easy cases on her. She shouts him in place, explaining that she might be a pediatrician by training but she's been a combat surgeon for the past year.

Later, she finds Tom in the chow line. Jean serves them food explaining that last night was a special meal to impress them. She also says most people don't have their own quarters and are sleeping 10 to a cubicle. She's on edge and warns them to watch themselves.

Tom and Anne eat, discussing the odd vibe. Everyone seems very casual, like they've forgotten the aliens are even there.

Pope and his people check out the weapon stores. Maggie hears him saying they're just getting the lay of the land so they can figure out what they can grab and leave.

Clemons and Tector, now going as Gunnery Sgt. Murphy, bark at them to fall in line.

Weaver finds Hal practicing putting his weapon together. He tells Hal that a lot of people have never seen combat and because Hal has, he might end up leading them so he needs to earn their respect.

Maggie sneaks a gun from the weapons lock-up.

Tom goes back to his quarters and finds Anne patching up Matt. He got in a fight. A kid said the 2nd Mass is a bunch of cowards who just came here to steal from them and that Tom made a deal with the aliens to get released. Matt acknowledges he took the first swing. He's been suspended for a week.

Maggie finds Pope and the Berserkers trying to steal the weapons and gives them a chance to walk away. But before they can, Clemons and Tector bust them. When one of the Berserkers charges, Tector shoots him in the arm.

Pope now has it in for Clemons. They take Maggie in with them as she's saying it's not what it looks like.

Tom finds Manchester, urging him to let Maggie walk. He doesn't think they belong in lock-up and says that they'll need people like them to fight the aliens.

Manchester says he can't afford to look weak now. He asks Tom to back him in the vote tonight and he'll look into things.

Hal pays Maggie a visit in lock-up. He wants to get her out of there, but she's still angry about his non-response to her news that she had a kid in prison. He apologizes, but she runs him off.

Jean speaks at the meeting, saying that she's grateful but she can't help thinking about the friends she has out there and the fact they're not doing anything. "I don't think that makes you a bad man, Dr. Manchester, but I do think you're wrong," she says.

Manchester introduces Tom as "the hero of the 2nd Mass."

The room of hundreds cheers for him. He congratulates them on rebuilding, but talks about the resistance, and wonders if their real mission has been lost. He takes out Manchester's book

and reads from it: about people who advocated for accommodation during the American Revolution and those who understood the fight would only be over when the enemy was gone.

Tom goes on, saying that the aliens will only leave when they're forced. He's not ready to stop fighting.

Clemons interrupts with a message for Bressler. There's a de-harnessed boy outside who says he has a message for Tom.

It's not Ben. Tom doesn't recognize him. He says there's been a development with the overlords and Red Eye is waiting nearby to talk to him.

Tom is ready to go. Bressler, Weaver and Tom think the rebel aliens are their only tactical advantage, but Manchester orders the de-harnessed boy put in lock-up. He is upset that Tom didn't mention his son Ben was with them.

Left alone, Manchester tells Tom he didn't expect his friend to turn on him. He thinks Bressler got to him.

Manchester brings Pope up to his office for a steak dinner. He wants info on Tom Mason. "If you have anything on Mason that could impact our security, I'll look into letting you out," Manchester says.

Pope tells Manchester that Mason is pompous but if anyone's going to knock him down it'll be him and not Manchester.

Dai and Hal go down to lock up to break out Maggie and the de-harnessed kid to meet with the aliens.

Hal explains that he needed time to think after Maggie told him about her "bad girl past" because he's never met that Maggie. He offers her a clean slate. She agrees to go with them.

They meet up with Weaver and Tom and Porter clears a path for them. Before they can leave, Bressler busts in with his men and surrounds them. Bressler announces that Manchester has declared a state of emergency and the "dissidents" are all under arrest. Tom tries to get Bressler to talk to Manchester, but he refuses. Tector puts down his weapon and respectfully declines to arrest them, so they round him up, too.

Elsewhere, Manchester orders all members of the 2nd Mass rounded up, including Anne and Matt. He says they have to be watched until they prove they can be trusted.

Tom and Weaver are brought before Manchester, who says Tom should have told him he was abducted. He tells Tom people in the 2nd Mass told him about it. Manchester tells Bressler to lock them up, but Bressler asks "then what?"

Manchester plans a civilian trial for treason. There are announcements telling people to report anyone they see in the 2nd Mass.

Bressler comes down to lock-up and orders everyone released. He puts Manchester in a cell and announces Charleston is now under martial law. He urges Tom to hustle if he wants to make the meet up with the rebel aliens.

"Nice work, boys, look like you dropped us in the middle of a good old fashioned coup," Pope says.



## A More Perfect Union

Season 2

Episode Number: 20

Season Episode: 10

Originally aired: Sunday August 19, 2012  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle, Remi Aubuchon  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Dale Dye (Porter), Jessie Schram (Karen), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee)  
Guest Stars: Terry O'Quinn (Arthur Manchester), Matt Frewer (General Bressler), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Ty Olsson (Sgt. Clemmons), Cainan Wiebe (Marshall)  
Summary: When skitters approach the newly combined resistance force, the groups' interaction surprises everyone. Meanwhile, Tom finds out life-changing news just as the 2nd Mass comes face-to-face with their most dangerous threat to date.



Gen. Bressler lets Tom and the 2nd Mass go. He explains he's been waiting for Manchester to come to his senses and let them go on the offensive, but since he's not, he's declaring marshal law. Tom won't go along with it, so Bressler orders them locked back up.

But before they can go back in their cells, there's a signal for an outer perimeter breach.

They charge upstairs to find skitters in the common area, led by Red Eye. Bressler's ready to shoot when Ben pops out from among the rebels. Bressler still won't give the order to stand down so

members of the 2nd Mass stand in front of the skitters in a sign of solidarity. Finally, he relents.

Guards warily march Red Eye and Ben into Manchester's office. Ben speaks for him, with his spikes glowing. "Captain Weaver, I'm not sure you realize the prize you had when you captured the overlord last week," he explains. That overlord was in charge of military operations for the eastern US. Red Eye says it was a mistake to let him live.

He explains the overlords are so smart, they don't use computers – they keep everything in their heads. If that overlord had been killed, the alien efforts would have been thrown into chaos.

Red Eye explains they have intel on when that overlord will be vulnerable again. The aliens are building a machine and the overlord will be there in three days to inspect it. The rebels need the human's help because they can't approach undetected. Ben leaves with the rebels.

Bressler doesn't believe it and shoots the mission down. He orders Tom and Weaver locked up again but Weaver suggests he let the 2nd Mass go on the mission. Bressler agrees.

When they leave, Bressler orders Clemmons to take out all the rebel skitters overnight.

Outside the compound, Hal goes looking for Ben. He apologizes for what happened with Karen. Ben tells him he thinks he's found a place he belongs. Hal thinks he belongs with his family, but Ben's mind is made up.

Back in Charleston, Anne and Lourdes pack up medical supplies when Anne has to break to barf. Tom doesn't know she's pregnant yet. She'll tell him after this mission.

Up in his office, Manchester is indignant that he's under house arrest. Tom is telling him again that they have to go fight when Ben comes in bleeding. His camp was attacked.

At the camp, there are dead skitters and harnessed kids everywhere. Bressler asks if he saw who did it, Clemons collects evidence – of his own attack. Bressler cancels Tom's mission.

Ben tells his dad the mission is about more than taking out the overlord – the machine they're building is very dangerous. Red Eye had more evidence than he was willing to share with Bressler. Tom and Weaver tell Bressler they're going and he puts up a show of objecting, but is secretly pleased when they go forward.

Dai, Maggie, Anthony and Weaver pack up weapons. Tom's daughter Jean wants to go, but he tells her she should stay in Charleston and help rebuild. She's worried about losing him but he assures her he'll be fine.

Ben draws up plans of the machine layout from memory. Tector rejoins the Berserkers, explaining he shot Lyle in the arm so Clemons wouldn't kill him. Pope accepts him back.

Tom tells Matt that he wants him to stay behind and keep Lourdes safe. Anne joins Tom.

The 2nd Mass rolls out.

On site, they poke through the cramped underground tunnels. Ben leads Weaver and the rest to a wall, where he expects the chamber to be on the other side. He tells Tom he can feel that the overlord is there.

Dai and Anthony blow the wall. The small 2nd Mass goes through into a giant cavernous space with an equally large glowing machine in the middle of the chamber. They all wonder how long until the aliens show up. They split up to lay out C4 around the machine of the towering machine. It's pointing up at the sky. Ben says it wasn't meant for humans.

Ben's harness starts to glow and skitters rush in. One skewers Dai before anyone can react. More skitters rush in and they try to fight them off but the skitters quickly grab each of them. Karen comes in.

Cut to all of the humans strung up by their hands at the base of the machine. The overlord shows up. Karen tells them they're all going to die, but first they're going to talk. Karen wields the torture stick she used before on Tom, then turns it to Hal, but she kisses him instead. He passes out.

She zaps Weaver. She moves on to Anne and is about to zap her when she puts her head on Anne's stomach instead. She tells Tom that Anne's pregnant with his child. Karen's about to zap Anne when Tom says he'll tell them anything they want to know.

Just then, a group of rebel skitters bust in. The alien restraints that were holding the humans go slack and they fall to the ground, free. The rebels attack as Red Eye jumps on the overlord. They fight, but eventually, the overlord gets the upperhand and slices him with a talon.

Tom grabs the zapping torture stick and races at the overlord. He swipes his legs out from under him, knocking him to the ground. He stabs him repeatedly with the stick.

Karen tells Tom it's not over and he'll never win, then she scampers up the walls and gets away.

Ben tends to Red Eye, who is beyond help. He gives Ben a message and takes Tom's hand, telling him to keep the fight going.

Tom and Ben carry the unconscious Hal out of there. They regroup and leave. Safely outside, they blow the machine.

They return to Charleston, carting Dai's body and Hal. "Mission accomplished, sir," Weaver reports to Bressler.

They come home to a hero's welcome. Tom gets a big hug from his daughter. Matt asks Ben if he's staying. Tom starts to explain that Ben has important work to do, but Ben says he is.

In sick bay, Anne says there's technically nothing wrong with Hal. They just have to wait and see what happens.

Tom tells Anne he's happy she's pregnant, but she wonders how fair it is to bring a child into this world. He tells her they have to if there's ever going to be a future.

Hal wakes up from his hospital bed with no one else around. He goes to the mirror and a small bug crawls out of his eye and into his ear. He smiles.

Tom visits Manchester. Bressler has agreed to restore civil rule if Manchester gives up the office of majority leader, which he's fine with. Manchester thinks Tom would be perfect for the job. Tom is flattered, but he tells Manchester that he and Weaver have already agreed that Charleston is not the place for the 2nd Mass. They have to keep fighting.

Outside, Tom tells Weaver the sooner they get out of Charleston, the better. Suddenly, the walls start to quake. Everyone runs outside and looks up to the sky, which is full of lightning and dark clouds. There's a high pitched whine and suddenly blue lights start falling from the sky – they're pod ships. One lands directly in front of the 2nd Mass and opens up. A new kind of alien gets out.





# **Season Three**



## On Thin Ice

Season 3

Episode Number: 21

Season Episode: 1

Originally aired:	Sunday June 9, 2013
Writer:	Remi Aubuchon
Director:	Greg Beeman
Show Stars:	Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)
Recurring Role:	Dale Dye (Porter), Gloria Reuben (Marina Perlata), Jessy Schram (Karen), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Brad Kelly (Lyle)
Guest Stars:	Jared Keeso (Lars), Jorge Vargas (Card Player), Roy Marshall (Roy), Doug Jones (Cochise), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Matt Frewer (General Bressler), Hector Bucio (Diego), Megan Danso (Deni), Terry O'Quinn (Arthur Manchester)
Summary:	We open seven months after the 2nd Mass arrived in Charleston. In the interim, Tom has been elected to political office, but he has his hands full as the resistance continues to battle the alien invaders. Tom's decision to have the rebel skitters fight alongside humans creates tension and raises suspicions that someone may be feeding secrets to the enemy. Meanwhile, Hal struggles with nightmares that seem so real, he has difficulty knowing if he's awake or dreaming. And Tom and Anne prepare to welcome their baby.



Harnessed children work in a mine as skitters and mechs supervise. Weaver, his daughter Jeanne, and Matt peer from the edges of the mine as they try to rescue her harnessed boyfriend Diego.

Matt sneaks in and plants alien charges around the mine.

They detonate the charges. Ben and another teen rappel down the cliff to take on the skitters as Pope and his band bust in firing, with Maggie and Hal in Jeeps. It's a full on assault of the aliens. The 2nd Mass loads the harnessed kids into vans, liberating them.

They think they've won but suddenly two giant Mega Mechs rise up from behind the boulders, where they appeared to be waiting. The rebels run for cover, but are sitting ducks. A fresh wave of skitters runs out of the mine and attacks Ben.

From above, Red Eye the rebel skitter and his cohorts race down to aid the human rebels.

Tom rides in on horseback with a new Volm alien at his side and they help end the fighting. The members of the 2nd Mass head home.

Back at base, Tom is greeted by Bressler, who calls him president. Marina Perlata, one of Tom's aides, beseeches him not to go out fighting anymore, but he won't hear it.

Seven months have passed.

Hal is helped out of the Jeep's firing tower and into his wheelchair.

Jeanne brings Diego to Anne Glass, who is super pregnant, to remove his harness. She has a fancy new Volm contraption she uses to remove it easily and painlessly. She's the only one the Volm have taught how to use it.

Tom reports to a debriefing attended by Weaver, Bressler, his sons and Cochise, their new alien ally. They think the ambush means they have a mole. Cochise politely weighs in, saying they're unnerving the Espheni.

Tom wants to appoint Arthur Manchester to head an investigation into the mole.

At night asleep, in a bed he shares with Maggie, Hal dreams he is walking through a forest to meet Karen, his old girlfriend turned alien collaborator. They kiss passionately until he wakes up with a start. He tells Maggie he doesn't remember what the dream was about.

Ben tells his dad that Red Eye wants a meeting tonight outside of town; the rebel aliens don't want to come into town because of the anti-skitter talk.

In physical therapy, Maggie shares her concerns about what Karen might have done to Hal. Lourdes assures her they checked him out thoroughly after his alien encounter and found nothing wrong, even though his legs don't seem to work.

Manchester tries to recruit Anthony to help with his investigation into the mole because he used to be a police officer. Manchester has a list of 50 possible suspects and needs help to narrow it down.

Red Eye meets with Weaver and Tom and tells them they've heard word of another major attack on Charleston. He says the new alien Volm are targeting the Espheni, who have a new even more dangerous overlord: Karen.

Back at the base, Manchester tells Tom he's narrowed the list of suspects down to a dozen. He's about to inform Tom when Anne goes into labor.

Jeanne explains to Diego that she'd been looking for him.

The Volm have given the humans new weapons, technology and strategies to defeat the Espheni, whom they've been following from planet to planet trying to fight.

In a saloon in Popetown on the edge of Charleston, which looks like something from the Wild West, Pope shushes anti-alien talk, lording over the place that bears his name.

An unseen person pays Manchester a visit. He's not surprised to see them, asking if it's that time already, but then sees the gun. "So it's you?" Manchester says. Whoever it is shoots him in the chest.

Later, looking into Manchester's murder, Anthony looks at the blast that killed Manchester and thinks it's from modified Volm technology. Tom asks Anthony to pick up the investigation into the mole.

Tom rushes to Anne's side as she gives birth. It's a girl.

Tom opens the Citizen's Forum by welcoming his new daughter Alexis. He gives a rally-the-troops speech. Pope watches, annoyed, and says he has a plan.

At night, Hal is with Karen in the forest again. She talks about her "transformation" to become one of the Espheni. She planted a probe in Hal's brain, so they'll be connected. She kisses him again. She says he woke up paralyzed from the neck down seven months ago because he was fighting the probe. She strips and climbs on top of him, her alien spine glowing.

Weaver and Tom share a toast to the future. Weaver admits he doesn't trust the Volm, but Tom thinks Cochise and the Volm are the reason they're winning against the Espheni.

Anne wakes up in the middle of the night to see her newborn sitting up in her bassinet smiling at her.

Hal wakes up in the morning and can't find his boots, which he left by his bed and are now in the back of his closet covered in mud.

Tom and Cochise take Weaver down to a secret underground tunnel that only they know about. There are towers around town that prevent the Volm ships from entering the atmosphere. Tom shows Weaver a giant weapon the size of a building that's being constructed underground.

## Collateral Damage

Season 3  
Episode Number: 22  
Season Episode: 2

Originally aired: Sunday June 9, 2013  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle  
Director: James Marshall (III)  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Dale Dye (Porter), Gloria Reuben (Marina Perlata), Jessy Schram (Karen), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Guest Stars: Jared Keeso (Lars), Doug Jones (Cochise), Megan Danso (Deni), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne Weaver), Matt Frewer (General Bressler), Hector Bucio (Diego), Terry O'Quinn (Arthur Manchester), Jorge Vargas (Card Player), Roy Marshall (Roy)  
Summary: With hostilities escalating between the resistance and the alien invaders, Tom calls on a nuclear specialist known as "The Rat King" to come up with a plan that will strip the aliens of their power. As suspicion continues to mount about a mole within the resistance, Tom and his leaders make a drastic decision that jeopardizes trust among the group. Anne, meanwhile, has a feeling that all is not right with her newborn.



Ben sneaks a look at a nuclear plant where dozens of Mega Mechs are waiting to refuel. Harnessed kids are working below but dropping like flies from the radiation.

Hal sees Maggie goofing around with Lars, her battle buddy, and gets jealous. Maggie can tell Hal's holding something back about what Karen did to him.

Weaver lays out plans to attack the nuclear plant from behind, with Marina Perlata and Porter. Weaver will take a small team while the Volm stay behind to protect the city. They're worried about blowing up the plant and setting off a

massive radiation leak. Marina mentions Roger Kadar, a nuclear physicist, who's an agoraphobe who never leaves his lab.

Marina brings Tom and Weaver to see him. He's talking to himself and running experiments. He's the reason Charleston has power.

He's intrigued by their request for help to safely destroy the reactor.

Anne is changing her week-old daughter's diaper when she takes her eyes off her and finds her under the bed, saying "Mama."

When Tom comes home she tells him Alexis is very advanced.

Matt and his friends set off a half stick of dynamite in an abandoned house. The blast is so big it brings troops.

Anne chews him out later for scaring people. He says he was bored. She tells him he has to start going to class again and he throws "a you're not my mother" at her.

Down with Dr. Kadar, he explains how to turn the reactor off before they blow it and make sure the containment doesn't meltdown. They need him to show them where to put the charges, but he freaks out over the idea of leaving his lab.

Up in the war room, Gen. Porter leads a briefing on the attack, which relies on surprise. Kadar is there. Weaver explains that his fighters, including Anthony and Pope, will sneak in from the undefended back of the plant.

Nobody is being told more about the mission than they need to know for their part, but Pope's guys are nosy.

Someone sneaks into the war room at night and scans the plants with alien tech. The scanner turns into a tiny flying machine and takes off.

Out in the forest, Pope, Weaver and his men walk right into an attack. The back way wasn't left open. But it turns out, that was exactly the plan.

Tom knew the mole would leak the plans. He and his men and Dr. Kadar are waiting to enter the plant now that Weaver and Pope have drawn the mechs away.

Tom and Anthony are quickly fired on by harnessed kids who are guarding the plant. They fire on them but then go to rescue a harnessed kid who's crying in pain. The kid barely looks human anymore and quickly dies. Another harnessed kid attacks Lars. Tom and Maggie lead Dr. Kadar into the plant.

Out in the woods, Ben, Pope and his men are fighting off the mechs when Hal rides in on his Jeep and joins the fight.

In the plant, Kadar calculates they have 15 minutes to set the charges before the radiation gets them.

When a skitter fires on them, Kadar falls and breaks his glasses. He's useless in the control room and starts to freak out. He directs Tom on what to do to shut down the reactor.

Maggie fends off harnessed kids outside the control room as Tom tries to hot wire the control board. They succeed in shutting it down and get out.

Weaver and his men collect their dead. The plan they died for was a success, the mole never learned the real plan. Pope is angry they used their own as sacrificial lambs. Weaver doesn't seem particularly pleased about it either.

Tom, Kadar and everyone get clear of the plant and watch it blow, and no mushroom cloud ensues.

Back at Charleston, Lars is dying from a toxic bite from a harnessed kid. Tom thanks him as Hal and Maggie sit at his bedside. Lars asks Maggie to keep his dog tags.

Later, Tom and Weaver toast the fallen. Weaver is still skeptical of the Volm. He worries that the weapon they're building might not be what they say it is.

Cochise drops in, to thank them. He tells them to expect the Espheni to attack Charleston in force. They are bringing in every surviving mech and beamer in the region and will hit them hard to prove the humans haven't weakened them.

"I advise you to keep your soldiers on the perimeter on high alert," Cochise says.

Later, Matt visits his dad to apologize for blowing up the building. Tom has put him on a detail to rebuild it. Matt still doesn't see the point of school during war. Tom tells him they'll need people to rebuild when the war is over. Tom feels bad for not being around more and promises to help with his homework.

Matt tells his dad he said something really mean to Anne. Tom tells his son to talk to her.

Matt goes to Anne to apologize. He asks if he can call her "mom."

Matt notices the baby never cries. Anne settles for calling her unique.

Maggie wakes up in the morning to see Hal gone and his chair empty. She finds him in the woods, walking away from her. He's in a trance. She shakes him out of it and points out he's walking. She helps him away. Karen and a skitter watch him go.

## Badlands

Season 3

Episode Number: 23

Season Episode: 3

Originally aired: Sunday June 16, 2013  
Writer: John Wirth  
Director: David Solomon  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Dale Dye (Porter), Gloria Reuben (Marina Perlata), Jessy Schram (Karen), Luciana Carro (Crazy Lee)  
Guest Stars: Brad Kelly (Lyle), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Summary: The two-year anniversary of the alien invasion is fast approaching as the people of Charleston prepare for another potentially devastating offensive. A sniper attack by an unlikely gunman creates questions and doubts within the new government. Hal believes he knows the identity of the mole. And Anne's concern for her baby continues to grow.



Matt totes a rifle through outposts around Charleston, resupplying outposts on guard for the expected Espheni attack. Anthony mans one, Ben another and Pope and his Berserkers another. Matt brings food and coffee to Pope. From afar, as they're distracted, someone takes aim at Crazy Lee.

Back at base, Tom watches Hal do his physical therapy. He's walking again, with crutches.

Tom checks on Jeanne efforts to construct a Liberty Tree in the town square, as a symbol.

Crazy Lee goes to another pile of rubble

to go to the bathroom. Pope makes her put on a bullet proof vest before she goes. Shots ring out. Pope goes to check on her and thinks the vest has saved her, but then he sees that she fell on a piece of rebar and it's skewered in the back of her head. She can't see. He sends Matt for a hacksaw.

Tom and Weaver hear reports of gunfire and head out to investigate. There's lots of firing, but they can't see who's doing the shooting. Weaver hits a shooter and goes to investigate: it's a man.

Pope is about to saw at the rebar through Crazy Lee head when notices how deep it is. It goes all the way through her head and comes out the top.

Back at the base, Anne goes to draw blood from her daughter Alexis and thinks she hears her say "don't". When he looks at the blood, she turns back around and sees her weeks old daughter standing in her crib. Anne freaks out and tells Lourdes it's not normal.

Amid the shooting, Weaver aims an AT-4 at the shooter and President Mason says he wants to talk. When the man fires, Weaver blasts him. Except that it turns out to be a woman.

Crazy Lee is alive, but still impaled. Pope gently saws at the rebar as Matt hold's Crazy Lee's head. Eventually, she tries to tell him to stop, but Matt doesn't want to give up.

Back at base, Lourdes goes to Tom and tells her she's worried about Anne and thinks she might have post partum depression. Lourdes ran tests on her when Alexis was born and they were all normal.

Maggie comes back to her room and sees Hal packing up to leave. He tells her Karen implanted something in him and he's been going to see her. He's worried he's the mole. Maggie assures him he's not and vows to stand by him.

Tom goes to see Anne and apologizes for being neglectful. "You have no idea what you're talking about, Tom....I don't think she's human," Anne says.

Back at base, in the hospital, Loudres explains Crazy Lee's injury to Pope. The rebar is the only thing keeping her alive.

Later, Tom changes his daughter's diaper, marveling at her. She seems like a normal 3 week old. Anne insists she's not crazy.

In jail, Weaver and Bressler talk to the woman who was firing on them. She'll only say her name, Katherine Fisher, and her rank and serial number. Tom joins them and offers to guess what happened: he guesses they watched them for a few days and saw them working with the Espheni, harnessed kids and a new race of aliens and thought they were human collaborators. He explains that the Espheni are rebels and the Volm are helping them.

When she's told Tom is the president, she says she works for the real President, Benjamin Hathaway. He sent her there.

Later, Bressler, Weaver and Tom try to figure out what the rest of people are going to tell the President about them. They worry about how to prep for an Espheni attack and deal with whatever the President is going to think.

Lourdes goes to check on Anne, who is worried about keeping it together. Anne is ready to accept her help until she realizes that Tom sent her.

Weaver visits Jeanne by the Liberty Tree, which welders are still working on. Jeanne is worried about the threats they're facing and he reassures her.

Tom visits Crazy Lee in the hospital to comfort Matt and thank her. Pope stops him and gives him grief for the lack of information he's giving them. He blames Tom for what happened to Crazy Lee. Tom doesn't argue.

Pope sits by Crazy Lee's bedside and talks to her. She asks him to take her to Disneyland. But he can't go, he got in a fight with Goofy and is banned for life. She passes away. Pope takes her necklace and gives it to Matt.

Back with Hal, Maggie tries to jog his memory to see if he really is the mole. She says he isn't responsible. She tries to convince him not to turn himself in.

Marina tries to help Tom compile a list of VP candidates, but he skips ahead and picks her.

He addresses the crowd at the dedication of the Liberty Tree, promising to inscribe the names of the dead on leaves of the tree. He tells people to remember of what they're fighting for. He hangs his wife's name on the tree. Pope watches the ceremony with a bottle.

Hal is wakling over to talk to his dad when there's a giant explosion on the horizon and alien ships race overhead. Anne holds her daughter Alexis, who smiles at the chaos.



## At All Costs (1)

Season 3

Episode Number: 24

Season Episode: 4

Originally aired: Sunday June 23, 2013  
Writer: Heather V. Regnier  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Dale Dye (Porter), Matt Frewer (General Bressler), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Megan Danso (Deni), Robert Sean Leonard (Dr. Roger Kadar), Stephen Collins (President Hathaway), Michael Hogan (General Donovan), Luvia Petersen (Lt. Fisher), Nikolas Filipovic (Markley), Ali Skovbye (Emily), Lilli Clark (Radio Operator), Sylvesta Stuart (Soldier), Nneka Croal (Nurse), Sean Michael Kyer (Tommy)  
Summary: After the people of Charleston defeat another alien attack with the help of new advanced weaponry, Tom is invited to meet with a powerful leader. While Hal wrestles with an invasive evil, Ben struggles with his identity and the notion of being human again. And Anne uncovers startling new information that puts everyone in jeopardy.



Mega Mechs take fire through the bat-tlements outside the Charleston HQ. Hal and the other soldiers hold them off in a vicious fire fight. Down in HQ, the human prisoner Katherine is asking to be let loose to join the fight. Tom gets word that beamers are inbound and is excited to hear the Volm are ready. Tom takes Katherine topside and insists she watch the night skies with binoculars as flying Espheni ships zoom in. She thinks they're sitting ducks. Then two Volm aliens take aim at them with alien bazookas and blast them out of the sky. Katherine is baffled – and then Cochise

the friendly Volm shows up and her jaw really drops.

The day after the battle, everyone cleans up the compound, including collecting their dead. Tom and Weaver don't understand why the Espheni would wage a fight they can't win. Maggie gets nervous as Hal asks his dad to talk. He makes plans to talk to him later, but Maggie insists on going with him. After watching Hal blast away on Espheni, she's even more sure he's not secretly the mole, even if he has his doubts.

In her apartment, Anne takes a cheek swab of her daughter. Lourdes interrupts and Anne hides what she's doing. When Lourdes leaves, Anne tells her infant daughter she loves her and the girl replies she loves her, too.

Later, Tom and Weaver review the list of the dead, including a tough fighter named Cyrus. Anthony brings Katherine by. After seeing how the Volm helped, she's ready to apologize. She suggests they radio President Hathaway to tell him.

She reaches Hathaway and hands it over to Tom, who catches the president up on their Volm allies. President Hathaway asks to meet face to face at "keystone."

Lourdes walks Ben and Denny through the process of removing their remaining internal harnesses, using their new Volm technology. Ben has a hard time with the idea of losing his super alien strength and getting his asthma back, but agrees.

Tom, Weaver and Bressler meet with Pope and ask to borrow his vintage plane. He insists on going with them.

Weaver worries about the risks of Tom going to meet Hathaway personally, but Tom thinks it's worth it. He's surprised to see Anne waiting to send him off on his secret mission. She gives him a medical bag and he assures her he loves her no matter what. Cochise and Katherine join Tom, Pope and Bressler for their flight.

Ben and Denny talk about what having their harnesses out will be like. Ben will miss translating for the Espheni and being needed.

Anne visits Dr. Kadar, the nuclear physicist. She tells him about the Volm technology that removes harnesses and he says they'd need a DNA test to confirm if they've been totally removed and if any alien DNA remains. He gives her a list of things he'd need to devise one.

Ben shares his de-harnessing concerns with his younger brother, Matt, who suggests he just keep his spikes if he wants to.

Meanwhile, Pope's plane touches down at the meeting point. They are immediately surrounded by troops, with weapons. General Donovan greets them and freaks out when he sees Cochise. The troops punch Tom and knock him to the ground to arrest him, followed by Cochise. Then President Hathaway shows up and diffuses the situation.

Still, Tom is alarmed when the president has Cochise taken away for "security reasons." Cochise assures Tom he'll be OK.

Anne brings Dr. Kadar the supplies and tissues samples from the deharnessed kids and, presumably, her daughter Lexi.

Tom and Bressler sit down with President Hathaway and General Donovan. Hathaway explains a communication network they have set up and that's what he's protecting by keeping Cochise away. Still, he wants to know more about the Volm weaponry, since it's been more effective than any human weapons against the Espheni.

General Donovan worries about the Volm's plan for earth after the war. Tom brought Cochise so he could explain.

Hathaway asks Cochise why the Volm are fighting the Espheni: for a flower, the Catarius, a flower from his homeland. But he's never seen it, he was born on a ship that left their homeland hundreds of years ago. He tells them to be grateful they're fighting on the soil of their homeland. He's fighting so someday his grandchildren might see a real Catarius. Hathaway is convinced.

Denny tells Ben she's decided to go through with the surgery.

Hal goes looking for his dad. Weaver tells him Tom will be back in a few days. Hal says it can wait, but goes home angry.

In his room, he imagines a version of himself mocking him for staying quiet. Hal tries to convince himself maybe he was dreaming of meeting Karen, but mocking Hal says he'll keep lying to everyone because he wants to keep seeing Karen. Hal punches the mirror and turns into the cocky version of himself, who tells Hal he'll take over for awhile. Basically, Hyde is running Jekyll.

Tom radios Weaver to tell him he and Cochise are going to present their position to Hathaway's people and are staying longer. Anne comes in and via the radio, Tom tells her he'll be back as soon as he can.

Maggie runs into new cocky Hal, who tells her he's decided he was just dreaming and won't tell his dad anything.

Anne meets with Dr. Kadar, who tells her 11 of 12 samples are normal, but one has alien DNA wrapped around human DNA, "like a parasitic jungle vine slowly strangling it." Kadar guesses it's from Lexi and insists they tell Tom. Anne agrees, but when his back is turned, she picks up a wrench and knocks him out. She takes Lexi's sample and leaves.

Hall makes vigorous love to Maggie and tells her he loves her, then gives a sinister smile.

Ben goes to check on Denny. It turns out she changed her mind about the surgery. She snaps the glasses he brought for her.

Anne returns home to Lexi with Lourdes and offers her a glass of wine. Lourdes drinks, Anne watches her as she passes out. Anne packs up her things and grabs Lexi.

Later at night, Ben points out star systems to Denny, who's wearing her taped together glasses. (The significance is unclear, since Ben also has glasses on. Probably just for show.)

With the president, Hathaway thanks Tom for his sacrifice. Gen. Donovan reports enemy aircraft are in-bound and implies Tom and Cochise led them there.

In the race to flee, Hathaway and Donovan grab Cochise and take him on their plane, saying there's no time to argue about it.

Anne runs through Charleston at night with Lexi. She runs into a skitter and a harnessed kid talking for it. "No, you can't have her," Anne says. She turns to run, but Hal is there and stops her, telling her everything is fine.

In the air, beamers fire on the president's plane and they watch it go down. Bressler tries to avoid the incoming fire but they're hit, too. He struggles to get the plane to the ground, but it comes in disabled, with the ground rushing up.

To be continued...



## Search And Recover (2)

Season 3

Episode Number: 25

Season Episode: 5

Originally aired: Sunday June 30, 2013  
Writer: Jordan Rosenberg  
Director: Sergio Mimica-Gezzan  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Gloria Reuben (Marina Peralta), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne Weaver), Matt Frewer (General Cole Bressler), Robert Sean Leonard (Dr. Roger Kadar), Blair Penner (Guard), Dorinha Reynolds (Dead Woman)  
Summary: When a mission goes terribly awry, Tom and Pope must rely on each other to survive. Meanwhile, Weaver and company search desperately for two members of the 2nd Mass who have gone missing. And Marina takes matters into her own hands in Charleston, disregarding Tom's authority.



Tom wakes up in the wreckage of their plane crash. Bressler, the pilot, is dead. Tom pulls Pope from the wreckage as the plane goes up in flames.

Back in Charleston, Hal is woken up in his room by Ben, reporting that Anne and Alexis are missing. Later, Dr. Kadar explains the DNA test he ran on Alexis to Hal, Ben, Matt, Lourdes, Weaver and Marina. He explains that Alexis is a hybrid, human-alien.

Weaver wants to send out a search party, but Marina Peralta, the acting president, doesn't think they can spare the men from protecting Charleston. He

explains the members of the 2nd Mass are family and he has to go look for Anne. She gives him 24 hours and worries how people will react to the hybrid baby. She makes clear that she completely understands what they're fighting for.

In the forest by the crash, Pope blames Tom for rushing off to Keystone when they knew they had a mole. A beamer hovers overhead, scanning for them. When it flies off, Tom gets up, but Pope yanks him back down, saving him from its returning search beam. As someone who knows how to hide from the authorities, Pope suggests they wait it out.

Back in Charleston, Matt wants to go on the search party. Hal (who was the last person to see Anne, even though nobody knows it), says no, but Weaver overrules him.

Marina comes to say good-bye to Weaver, gently. Jeanne watches the scene informs her dad that Marina likes him (in case you, the home viewer, missed it).

In the forest, Tom plans to walk back to Charleston. Tom realizes that the president hadn't given them the coordinates to where ever they were traveling, so how could the mole have known where to shoot them down? Pope chalks it up to Tom being the "king of chaos."

The search party, which includes Weaver, Hal, Maggie, Ben and Matt, stops when they see blood on the ground outside an old abandoned building. There's a body at the top of the front steps. Weaver inspects, but it's not Anne. Matt wants to stop and bury her.

Back in the forest, Tom wants to stop and make camp, but Pope argues they should keep moving. Tom needles Pope for not knowing how to build a fire. Tom gets to work essentially rubbing two sticks together. Pope taunts Tom for the idyllic childhood he imagines he had, but Tom says his father was a mean drunk and it's a miracle he survived.

Weaver says a few words over the dead woman they found. Matt takes a bracelet off her. They imagine what kind of mother she was. Hal remains aloof and distant and Maggie notices.

Marina visits Dr. Kadar, who is at work running the DNA of the other seven children who were born in Charleston. She shows him photos of the giant machine the Volm are building and asks him to determine what it is; she says Tom Mason sent her.

The search party stops for food. Matt and Ben talk about their last memories of their mom. Ben remembers being bothered by seeing their mom's body later, with a shoe missing. Matt worries about finding Anne.

In the forest, Pope roasts squirrel over a fire. Tom says his wife, Rebecca, did most of the cooking. He cooked breakfast for them on the weekends. Pope mentions his two kids, Brandon and Tonya. He last saw them five years ago. He tells Tom a story about working on a mini-bike with his son. A car raced by as his son was riding down the driveway and Pope confronted the driver. They got in a shouting match and Pope decked the driver, knocking him to the ground. His head cracked. The man died. "I was never cut out for a home life, but prison I understood," Pope says.

In the morning, Pope wakes Tom up by dropping a dead snake on him. Pope is laughing, but Tom doesn't think it's funny and says they're not pals now. They start fighting, bashing each other over trees, escalating, using branches and finally pulling knives until they hear skitters in the woods and hide. They blast one and run, but Tom realizes they're surrounding them. Tom and Pope reach a rushing river 50 feet below. Pope can tell what Tom is thinking and thinks it's a terrible idea, but before he can protest, Tom tackles him over the edge.

They wash up down the river, but alive. Pope decks Tom, and Tom pulls his gun. Then Tom tells him it's over, Pope wins. Tom tries to get up and realizes his ankle is badly hurt.

Searching for Anne with her dad, Jeanne worries about the aliens turning humans into them. She asks him to promise he won't let the aliens use her.

They stop when Ben finds a baby blanket in a puddle.

Maggie asks Hal what's going on with him, saying he's been acting weird. Ben sees human and skitter tracks together. Weaver plans to ask the rebel skitters to spy. Maggie sees Hal look around, seemingly angry at the sloppiness of the skitters.

Tom and Pope try to get dry. Tom is still trying to figure out how the Espheni tracked their plane. Pope puts Tom's ankle in a splint with a belt and tree branch, but Tom still can't put weight on it. Tom tells Pope to go without him. When Pope resists, Tom tells him he's a coward for not having the balls to walk out of the forest without him. It works. Pope takes his coat and leaves.

As night falls, Tom is cold and alone.

Marina visits Kadar, who is puzzled by the Volm technology. He says it has way more power than it should need. It might not be what they think it is. Kadar realizes Tom didn't ask her to look into it.

Kadar tells her all the other children's DNA tests were negative for alien DNA.

At night, Tom dreams his sons come to get him, saying Lexi needs his help. He wakes up when he hears skitters approaching. He shoots one, but the other keeps coming – until someone blasts it away. Pope is back. "There's only one thing I can't stand more than you on this planet, that's skitters," Pope says.

He helps Tom through the forest to a gassed up truck he found.

Back in Charleston, Matt hands the dead woman's bracelet on the Liberty Tree, for his own mother. Hal watches coldly from a distance.

Tom and Pope limp back into Charleston.

Tom wakes up in the infirmary two days later with Pope at his bedside. He's been there the whole time. He wants to get their stories straight – they each saved each other's lives, so now they're even. Weaver reports that the Volm are searching for Cochise.

Of their tie, Pope tells him "next basket wins."

Matt, Ben, Hal and Maggie come visit. Tom asks about Anne and Lexi. Weaver tells him they're missing.

## Be Silent And Come Out

Season 3

Episode Number: 26

Season Episode: 6

Originally aired: Sunday July 7, 2013  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle, John Wirth  
Director: Adam Kane  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Ryan Robbins (Tector), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Gloria Reuben (Marina Per-lata)  
Guest Stars: Darren Moore (Customer), Ken Camroux (Judge), Cynthia Loewen (Accountant)  
Summary: Hal finally reveals his internal struggle to everyone, and it doesn't bode well for the Masons. Lourdes experiments with a risky new medical procedure. And Charleston's government sees a massive shift in leadership when a group breaks away on a search and rescue mission.



Red Eye tells Tom and Weaver that his spies have confirmed that Karen is holding Anne and Lexi. Tom wants to rush out and look for them, but Weaver convinces him to wait 24 hours to hear from Karen. Hal argues for going to look for them and tells Weaver if Anne and Lexi die it'll be his fault. Maggie tries to talk to Hal but he's totally zoned out.

Marina takes Tom outside to talk to him about the Volm machine, telling him what Kadar said and her belief that the Volm are lying to them. They're interrupted by Hal, who knocks Marina down and puts a gun on Tom, forcing him into

a Jeep. Tom is trying to make sense of everything as Hal tells him he's taking him to Karen.

Marina sees Maggie and tells her what's going on and she runs for a machine gun. She takes out their Jeep, which flips over. Hal drags Tom out and into a nearby building.

Tom figures out that Hal isn't himself. Tom tries to get away and Hal stomps on his busted ankle. Karen wants information on the machine the Volm are building.

Outside the building, Maggie tells everyone what's been going on with Hal. Pope can't believe that she knew Hal was the mole and did nothing. He keeps going, taunting Ben about not wanting to get his spikes out until Ben decks him.

Weaver puts down his gun and walks closer to the building to talk to Hal. Tom hears him mentions Karen doing something to him and starts trying to reach his son, asking how he can help him. Real Hal tries to talk, but Bad Hal takes over and demands a Humvee and safe passage out of town. He shoots around Weaver. Everyone opens fire on Hal. He and Tom duck for cover.

Down on the ground, Pope questions why they aren't just shooting him. Weaver sends him away Marina checks with Tector to make sure he can take Hal out with a sniper rifle if he needs to. She tells Weaver if the time comes and he can't give the order, she will.

Matt tells Maggie she should go talk to Hal, he says he knows a way in. Ben joins them.

Upstairs, Tom correctly guesses what's going on below, with Marina calling the shots and Tector lining up to shoot Hal. He tries to convince Hal to give up.

In Popetown, at his bar, Pope takes bets on the odds both Masons will die, or just one will.

Back up in the building, Tom blames himself for not noticing what was going on with Hal. Tom talks to his son about his mom, saying she thought Hal would be a fighter pilot. Tom didn't think he had the focus, but after seeing him fight the aliens, he's realized his mom was right. Tom sees Hal's hand start quaking with the gun in it. Hal shouts at him to be quiet or he'll shoot, but Tom doesn't think he will.

Maggie, Ben and Matt reach the door. Maggie walks in unarmed and tells him to fight it, then Ben joins in. Hal cocks his gun and aims at Ben, but Tom tells him he won't hurt his family.

Hal puts the gun to his out head. They're trying to talk him down when Ben grabs him from behind. They all struggle and the gun goes off. There's blood on Hal's face and he's unconscious.

Pope lays out the next round of bets if Hal lives. Odds that he'll be charged with espionage (3:1), murder for the death of Arthur Manchester (12:1) or get off scot free (5:1). Weaver walks in sober and seething and the proceedings quiet. He orders a whiskey. He issues a warning to Pope: "If anybody tries to affect the odds one way or another, I will personally mount your head on the wall of this establishment." Pope sends Lyle to the infirmary to stand guard to make sure nobody gets any ideas.

In the infirmary, Lourdes tells them Hal has a concussion, but is OK. X-rays didn't show any alien stuff in him, but she's going to do a blood work up.

To learn more about the bug, Tom talks to Red Eye the rebel skitter. He explains each bug is specific to the person it is made for. He tells Tom they have something that will kill the bug in Hal if there is one; if there isn't one, it will kill Hal.

Tom wrestles with the decision.

Maggie goes to see Hal, who is strapped down. He tells her he felt the bug leave and begs her to let him go. He tells her he knows where Karen is keeping Anne and Lexi and he'll take her to them to prove he's on their side. He takes her hand and tells her to let him go. She runs off. When Tom comes by, Hal breaks down in tears, telling his dad he doesn't want to die like this.

They begin the procedure, drilling into the large amber-looking object to remove a small cocoon inside. It opens up and sprinkles tiny organisms all over Hal's face. They race into his eyes and course through his body, turning his veins black. He screams and writhes and twitches. Then he stops. A liquid pools from his mouth. Lourdes collects it with a syringe. It looks like mercury. They burn it.

Hal's heart has stopped. Lourdes injects him with epinephrine as Tom watches.

Hal wakes up with Tom and Maggie at his bedside. The last thing Hal remembers was going to talk to Tom about nightmares he was having. That was a week ago. Tom tells him he had a bug and they got it out. "I'm the mole?" Hal says. "Not anymore," Tom says.

Maggie assures him he's not responsible for anything Karen made him do.

The rebel skitters get Tom word on where Karen is keeping Anne and Lexi. He knows it could be a trap, but he's going anyway.

He gives Marina his whole file on the Volm technology and his letter of resignation. He urges her to talk to the Volm, because they need them, and to rely on Weaver.

Weaver sees Tom and the rescue party off. Pope adds his two cents: "Remind me to pull the old 'Eye Bug' defense next time somebody wants to lock me up." Tom and his three sons head off in search of Anne and Lexi.

Back in Charleston, Marina takes the oath of President of the New United States.



## The Pickett Line

Season 3

Episode Number: 27

Season Episode: 7

Originally aired: Sunday July 14, 2013  
Writer: Heather V. Regnier, Jordan Rosenberg  
Director: Sergio Mimica-Gezzan  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Gloria Reuben (Marina Peralta), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Stephen Collins (President Hathaway), Christopher Heyerdahl (Duane Pickett), Nneka Croal (Aide), Michael Rogers (Gil Pickett), Larissa Albuquerque (Bibby Pickett), Tom Stevens (Steve Pickett), Iain Belcher (Luke Pickett), Dalias Blake (Tow Truck Operator)  
Summary: The Masons run into trouble on the road when a family of outlaws intercepts their search-and-rescue mission. Meanwhile, looming doubts over the construction of a massive alien weapon ignite a conflict of interests. And an investigation to apprehend a killer on the loose hits a road block.



The Mason men continue their search for Anne and Lexi. Ben asks his dad if they'll go back to Charleston once they find them. Tom's not sure there's much for them there, but Ben has made friends, like Denny. He wants to help Lexi deal with being half-alien, since he has some experience there, with his spikes.

Tom asks Ben about the new rebel leader, who Ben describes as more patient than Red Eye.

Suddenly, in the dark, a wounded rebel skitter tumbles over the cliff near them. He warns them to get moving to avoid the skitters, who are looking for

them.

Tom and Ben head back to Hal and Matt at camp, warning them to get moving.

Back in Charleston, Pope is rolling in credits (money), but has nothing to do with them. He needs someone or something to trade with, like the people where President Hathaway was. Pope hears a noise and is informed by Weaver that, per President Marina Peralta, Popetown is being moved to make way for refugees.

A call for medical help goes out. Everyone rushes to see Cochise, the Volm, carrying wounded President Hathaway into town.

Tom and his sons are on horseback through a forest road when a truck pulls out in front of them and masked men come out. They pull guns on the Masons. Ben is able to use his alien speed to disarm one, but has to back down when they put a gun on Matt. When Tom realizes the robbers are isolated, he tries telling them about Charleston, but the robbers don't believe them. They take the Masons' stuff and leave.

In Charleston, President Hathaway recognizes Marina Peralta from Jim Webb's office. She was his Chief Administrative Assistant.

Cochise saved Hathaway by shielding him from the impact of the crash. The Volm body is designed to withstand greater punishment than the humans. Marina wants more information on the Volm weapon, but Cochise says it has to remain confidential given the security breaches in Charleston. He doesn't believe Hal Mason was the only leak, given how the Espheni work. Marina and Weaver share their concerns about the Volm weapon, but President Hathaway says it's key to beating the Espheni, and Tom agreed.

The robbers return to their farm. It's two men and teenagers, the Picketts.

Ben tracks the robbers to their home with his dad and brothers, determined to get their stuff back.

A young teen girl goes to get water for the horses and Ben grabs her at the pump. Ben sneaks up on the two boys as they're going through the Mason's food. He quickly gets a gun on them.

Hal goes after one of the adults, named Gil, while Tom disarms the dad, Wayne.

Hal is still grappling with Gil over a knife when a shot rings out. It's young Matt, firing at Gil. Gil's hit. "What'd you do that for?" he asks Matt as he slumps to the ground.

Back in Charleston, Weaver is annoyed to learn that Pope is encouraging a work slowdown of repair on army vehicles to make his point about citizen rights being infringed. He doesn't think Tom is coming back, saying Tom knows when to abandon a sinking ship.

In the country, Ben and Hal tend to wounded Gil while Tom tapes up Wayne and his children, explaining they only want their stuff back and they'll be on their way.

In his bar in Popetown, Pope addresses the gathered masses, urging them to say no to working for the Volm. Weaver joins them and tells them it's dangerous to stop work and it won't be tolerated. He arrests Pope for civil disobedience.

Ben works on Gil, talking to one of Wayne's son. He explains that his mom was killed by humans, so his dad is distrustful of them and they just stay up on their farm.

Tom talks to Wayne, explaining that they can't just hide forever.

Hal comes in to tell Wayne that Gil is dying. Wayne asks Tom's permission to see his dying brother and gives his word he won't try anything.

Wayne kneels at Gil's bedside and grabs the shotgun underneath and turns it on Tom. His sons disarm Hal, Matt and Ben. Wayne coldly marches them and lines them up against a wall, planning to shoot them all. Tom pleads with him, telling Wayne he shouldn't let his kids see him stop being human. He tells Tom to say good-bye to his sons. Tom turns around and faces Wayne, daring him to go through with it.

Wayne's daughter tries to stop him and the Masons take the opportunity to take back the guns, except from Luke Pickett, who manages to keep his. Wayne won't tell him to give it up, but Tom points out it'll just lead to everybody getting shot. The boy finally turns it over.

Cochise takes Hathaway, Marina and Weaver to the Volm machine. He explains the machine is to destroy an Espheni energy grid encircling the earth so that a Volm ship can get in, but if it goes awry, basically everybody gets nuked. Tom knew all of that, but didn't want to panic people.

Weaver visits Pope in lock-up, saying he might need his help. Weaver will only tell him he might be right about the Volm. He lets Pope go. "No more riling up the civilians," Weaver says.

On his way out, Pope tells Maggie that stuff might be brewing. She doesn't appreciate his gesture.

"I just figured without the Mason brood around, you might just need a friend," he says. They argue over their past sins, including him allowing his brother to abuse her.

"There's going to come a time, some time soon I suspect, when this pantomime of yours will come to an end, and you're going to come crawling back to me," Pope taunts.

Lourdes goes to change President Hathaway's IV. He calls her doctor and tells her young people like her give him faith that they'll rebuild when the aliens are gone.

Lourdes leaves and ducks into a stairwell to go down a flight. She counts off a certain number of paces in the floor, moves a bed under onto the spot and lies down. She takes out a Volm gun and aims up through the ceiling. She blasts a hole through President Hathaway on the floor above.

Later, she prays the rosary as alien squiggly things prance all over her face. When someone comes, they swim back into her eyeballs.

She's called to examine his dead body. Anthony says it was the same type of Volm gun that killed Manchester. They realize Hal wasn't the mole. With Lourdes in the room, Weaver and Marina tell Anthony to put together a task force to track down the mole.

Marina stops Weaver from telling Hathaway's people he's dead, she doesn't want his people in town on a witch hunt.

Later in the hall, Pope and Weaver essentially tell each other to watch their backs.

The Masons are on horseback 15 miles from Anne and Lexi in Mechanicsburg. Ben senses Mechs coming. There are two of them and skitters. They're headed right for the Picketts' farm. Hal doesn't want to go back, but Tom thinks if they don't help, they're no better than the aliens. He decides to go back alone and sends the boys on to recon Mechanicsburg.

Tom rides up outside the farm house, the front door is open. He looks around inside but the house seems empty. He hears a scream outside. Three skitters approach him. Tom's about to fire on them when bright lights shine behind him, a giant Mech stares him down.



## Strange Brew

Season 3

Episode Number: 28

Season Episode: 8

Originally aired: Sunday July 21, 2013  
Writer: John Wirth  
Director: David Solomon  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Gloria Reuben (Marina Perlata), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Jessy Schram (Karen), Brad Kelly (Lyle)  
Guest Stars: Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), Megan Danso (Deni)  
Summary: Things seem much too calm for Tom, making him suspicious of his surroundings. On his way back to Charleston, he makes a number of discoveries, some incredibly surprising and others utterly horrifying. Meanwhile, Weaver and Pope butt heads over how to handle the suspected mole.



Tom wakes from the sounds of battle and rolls over and turns off his alarm. He's in bed with his wife Rebecca and was dreaming that aliens invaded. It's 10 days before Christmas, he's home in his bed with the house dressed up for the holidays. It's snowing outside. All is right with the world on his idyllic neighborhood street. Inside, he marvels at his wife. She mentions he was talking about a woman named Anne in his sleep. He has no idea who she is.

The family gathers around the table

for breakfast. Ben the bookworm reads.

They leave for the day. Ben gets a ride from Deni. A girl named Rita climbs into Hal's car. They're either going to Florida for the Gator bowl or New York to see Rita's aunt for New Year's.

Stopped at a light on the way to work, Tom sees Daniel Weaver, a homeless man, banging on his hood with a sign that says "the end is near." Karen, a police officer, hauls him away.

At school, Tom runs into John Pope, a philosophy professor, who spent the night with Lourdes. Anthony is the Dean of the history department and hears Tom is in line for the spot.

Jeanne Weaver is Tom's secretary. Anne Glass has called twice for him.

Tom gives a lecture about Paul Revere and Longfellow's poem. Maggie and Lourdes are students in his class.

After class, Maggie tells him he's the reason she switched her major. She asks if he's moving to New York.

Back in his office, there's a bottle of McCallan 18 waiting for him with a note: "They'd be lucky to have you as Dean. Love, Anne."

In the teacher's lounge, Marina Peralta talks to Doc C (Cochise actor Doug Jones). Outside, homeless Daniel Weaver rants about the end.

Dai is waiting for Tom in his office. He says he's Anne's husband and thinks they're having an affair. He found brochures for New York, Chicago, Boston and Jacksonville.

Tom sees Weaver hauled away by Karen the cop outside.

Back home at night, Tom is brushing his teeth when he says outloud: "Who is Anne Glass?" Then he wonders what's so important about the four cities he keeps hearing about. Rebecca worries and thinks he has a fever. Tom looks in the mirror and sees his post-invasion self.

The next day at school, there's a note from Anne about their upcoming trip that weekend.

In the lounge, Tom tells Pope he thinks someone is trying to gaslight him. Pope says it's the simulacrum, where he can't tell his real life from his dreams. Tom sees Weaver outside again.

Ben drops by his dad's office and asks where he's going this weekend. Tom rushes out when he gets a text from Anne to meet at a coffee shop.

Anne takes his hand and asks him where they're going, it's his Christmas present. She has brochures for each of the four cities, even though they're in Boston. Tom sees Weaver again. Tom tells Anne he doesn't know her and what she's talking about would blow up his world. She suggests he take Rebecca to one of the four cities. Tom realizes it's not Anne and hears Karen saying "Tell me where you're taking her, you owe me that."

Cut to Tom with an alien probe strapped to his face. A harnessed child rips it off and Karen comes out. She knows the Volm are attacking one of those four cities, which is why she's pushed to get the grid up.

Suddenly Hal, Tom and Ben with Weaver and Pope bust in and grab Karen. She claims she doesn't know where Anne and Lexi are, the overlords took them. So he shoots her in the head.

Tom wakes up in a hospital bed with Ben at his side. He's been out two days. Tom gets up and runs into the war room and tells them Karen has moved up her schedule. Weaver says they're ready to go in 24 hours and asks Tom to lay out the map of their target: either Boston, New York, Chicago or Jacksonville. He realizes it's a trick again and shoots Weaver.

The harnessed child pries the mind control device off Tom's face and he laughs over how worried Karen is. She thinks he'll talk.

Next Karen threatens Anne and Lexi.

Back in Charleston, Maggie and Pope sit watch. Pope thinks Hal's never coming back.

Anthony reports on his investigation to Marina Peralta. Everyone in the hospital at the time of President Hathaway's assassination has an alibi, except Marina. She says she was in her room, guarded by a sentry.

Weaver shares things with Pope, who thinks she's the mole. He suggests that's why she hasn't let him radio Hathaway's people.

Maggie asks Weaver to put him on the first team in on the attack, she's after Karen. They're walking through the hallway when there's an explosion.

Back with the aliens, Karen shows Tom Anne and Lexi, encased in some sort of cocoons. He thinks Karen killed them.

In Charleston, the communications room is in shambles. Weaver would have been in there if Maggie hadn't stopped him, he grants her request to be on the front line. Anthony thinks the explosion is Espheni-made.

Karen tells Tom the defense grid goes operational in a matter of minutes, and then he's lost. She tells him he can save the human race if he tells her the plan. "Never," he says. It starts.

From inside the giant alien structure, Tom watches as an electromagnetic grid of sorts goes up around it. They're a hundred feet in the alien on a platform when suddenly Tom grabs the skitter standing by Karen and jumps off, using the alien as a landing pad.

In Charleston, Weaver tries to get people to refocus as the grid goes up. Marina talks to Weaver, she knows he thinks she's the mole, but she's ready to back the Volm plan because anything the Espheni are putting up can't be good for humans. She hopes he won't take over, because then the New United States will be under military rule.

Weaver goes to tell Pope not to make a move on Peralta, they're going forward with the mission, but she won't know the target.

Back on guard duty, Hal, Ben and Matt come back.

Tom walks alone through wreckage and burned out houses, coming to his own. He goes inside and takes his wife's Christmas list off the fridge. He goes upstairs and lies down on his old bed and cries. He sees his wife, who tells him he was the love of his life and she cherishes every memory of him. She wants him to do one thing for her: Get up and leave and don't come back.

He wakes up and she's gone. Tom gets up and starts walking.





## Journey To Xilbalba

Season 3  
Episode Number: 29  
Season Episode: 9

Originally aired: Sunday July 28, 2013  
Writer: Bradley Thompson, David Weddle  
Director: Jonathan Frakes  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Michael Bean (Dr. Sumner), Dale Dye (Porter), Doug Jones (Cochise), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar), Laci J Mailey (Jeanne), Gloria Reuben (Marina Peralta)  
Summary: Tom uncovers confidential intelligence about the heart of the alien operation. Meanwhile, Charleston prepares to mount an offensive against the Espheni, but a massive explosion brings the operation to a halt. And the identity of the mole is finally uncovered, but not before more blood has been shed.



Project Orange using the Volm weapon gets underway tomorrow morning at dawn, but Weaver won't tell Marina Peralta what their target is.

If they don't knock out the Espheni grid, humans will be wiped out in three months, so they have to trust the Volm weapon will work.

Lyle notices something odd in the nearby river: a sailboat. Tom Mason has returned.

Weaver and his sons welcome him back. Tom has to break the news to his sons that Anne and Lexi didn't make it. He tells them to take the pain they're feel-

ing and use it against Karen.

Tom goes to discuss strategy with Weaver, he suggests making Karen's Boston base a target, even though it was never under consideration. Porter likes the idea.

Tom says the Espheni are low on fuel for their mechs since the resistance took out the reactor, most of them are just standing around dead. Weaver worries Karen put a bug in Tom. Tom tells him to keep his eye on him and put a bullet in him if he gets suspicious. Porter needs to think it over.

Tom says hello again to Cochise, who offers his sympathies about Anne and Lexi.

Tom pays Pope a visit. Pope expects that Tom has a bug in him and promises to take him out if so; Tom is reassured that Pope wouldn't hesitate. As they're talking, they're suddenly knocked off their feet by a giant blast.

As the dust settles, Pope and Tom go investigate and find the whole Volm complex is gone. They find Cochise in the wreckage and take him to Lourdes. She tries to make an excuse for not treating him right away, but Tom yells at her and she joins them, but can't help Cochise because she doesn't know anything about Volm physiology.

Tom comforts Cochise as he tells Tom not to give up hope. He tells Tom if he's left alone, he'll regenerate. He seems to twitch dead, but is still breathing.

Lourdes checks her watch and disappears to set an Espheni charge in the air ducts. Weaver sees her walking away but thinks nothing of it.

Hal and Maggie go to the armory to restock.

The Espheni charge grows in the ducts, collapsing the cement walls around Hal and Maggie and everyone down below.

The explosion also collapsed the walls around Tom and Marina, who try to dig themselves out.

Ben uses his harness senses to help locate people in the rubble. Weaver leads the effort to dig people out and Pope helps.

Matt suggests they go through the storm drains to get to people.

Down below, Marina worries they lost hundreds of people. Tom sees Lourdes under rubble. He digs her out, but she's unconscious. He takes her to the infirmary.

Porter explains all the main exits are blocked with rubble. Tom and Anthony volunteer to go investigate elevator shafts. Another doctor diagnoses Lourdes with a concussion and wheels her to the side to recuperate. She's next to Cochise and alone.

Tom and Anthony reach a caved in dead end. They hear noises in an air vent and prepare to lob a grenade. But it's Dr. Kadar.

As Hal tries to figure a way out, Maggie uses the moment to pout about being left behind when they went in search of Anne.

Dr. Kadar looks at blueprints and figures out where to blast to get free.

Tom hears Lourdes trying to get out of bed and checks on her. She worries the mole was responsible then says she feels like Anne's death was her fault. She lays it on thick, making Tom feel worse, noting how sad it is that Anne died back where she started.

He leaves her alone with Cochise. She takes out a scalpel.

In the armory, Hal gets morose, thinking it's the end. Maggie tells him there's no one else she'd rather go out with if it's her time.

Kadar lays his first charge, but notices a giant crack in the ceiling beam. If it's load bearing, their charge could just lead to further collapse.

"Oh no, we're just right back where we started," Anthony says. Something about that statement strikes Tom.

Tom goes to get Lourdes, who manages to hide the scalpel she was about to use on Cochise. He tells her Anthony needs help, but when he brings her to him, he pulls a gun on her.

Tom remembers the med pack she sent with him to see the President and thinks it had a tracker in it. Tom mentions Lourdes' comment about Anne dying in Boston, back where she started – he never told her where Anne died. He demands to know why she wasn't in the infirmary when the charge went off.

She pleads her innocence, but he doesn't believe it. Finally, she draws her Espheni gun, but he disarms her before she can fire.

Matt and Ben look for a way down through the storm drain. Matt is feeling pessimistic, wondering if his family dying might be better for them.

In the armory, Hal and Maggie are getting low on air and are nearly unconscious. Maggie starts banging on a pipe. Matt and Ben hear the clanging and run for help. Maggie pries the pipe open and gets them fresh air.

They have Lourdes strapped down in the infirmary, but she wakes up and starts ranting about Tom's mistakes causing many people's deaths. Tom takes her Espheni weapon and walks off.

He fires at Kadar's charge, ignoring the perilous cracked beam.

It works, and the people trapped underground are free. Anthony tells everyone that Lourdes was the mole.

Hal apologizes to Maggie for not taking her on the search party, and promises they'll take on Karen as a team.

Tom checks in with Cochise, who is fully healed. Some of his people are trapped in the collapsed Volm headquarters, but he doesn't think he can get them out. Tom suggests Kadar likes a challenge. "First we bury or dead, then we start digging like there's no tomorrow," Tom says.

## Brazil

Season 3

Episode Number: 30

Season Episode: 10

Originally aired: Sunday August 4, 2013  
Writer: Remi Aubuchon  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Jessy Schram (Karen), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne Weaver), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Robert Sean Leonard (Dr. Roger Kadar), Erika Forest (Alexis)  
Summary: When the 2nd mass destroys a crucial Espheni base, a relentless enemy is taken down and the Mason family is reunited with those who had been lost. But the arrival of more interstellar players puts the fate of the Earth's remaining survivors in doubt.



Weaver, Pope, Lyle and Anthony drive a train to Chicago. They're decoys.

Cochise and Kadar prep the Volm weapon. Tom worries about the plan, that the Volm ship will come when they see the heat signature of the explosion as it's supposed to.

They've brought Lourdes as bait for Karen, to lure her out.

Hal talks to Maggie about the prospect of war possibly being over. He wants a house and big back yard, which seems to sound like hell to Maggie. If she survives

she expects to just keep fighting.

Three mechs appear in the train's path and Weaver prepares to blast them.

Meanwhile, Tom and the attack team open the doors and reveal that they're on a ship in the bay outside Boston. It looks like a ghost town; they hope their plan to fool the Espheni into thinking they're in Chicago worked.

Kadar fires the weapon, a blue ball of energy flies out and hits one of the tower's legs. But nothing happens. They need 10 minutes to recharge, during which they're practically sitting ducks.

Two beamers fly out at the ship and Hal fires a giant gun at them, taking them down. Just as everyone on the boat is starting to get really nervous, they notice that the tower is starting to crumble. It collapses in a giant heap of alien rubble and the grid disappears from the sky.

Moments later, a giant Volm ship emerges from the sky and settles on top of the rubble, in an ominous alien swap.

Later that night, they celebrate their victory around a camp fire.

Tom prepares to meet with the Volm commanders. He wants to introduce them to the rebel skitters, but Ben says they've left their encampment because they're nervous about working with the Volm.

Weaver and the train crew return to cheers. Cochise asked the Volm commanders to send help and they bailed them out. Tom makes a toast, noting that they're at "the beginning of the end."

"To the fish heads – may they freeze their asses off at the North Pole!" Pope adds.

In the morning, Cochise takes Tom and Weaver to meet the Volm commander, who turns out to be Cochise's father. Tom is eager to discuss their strategy, but the Volm commander tells them the Volm will take over the fight from here on out.

"Commander, with all due respect, our planet, our fight," Tom says.

They're informed the Volm plan to relocate the humans to Brazil and the Volm will provide security. Tom argues, saying they don't need the Volm help and there's no way they're leaving. The commander says it's settled, they will be relocated. He turns to leave and when Tom grabs him to stop him, he backhands Tom to the floor.

Weaver returns to camp and tells everyone to be packed up in an hour before they can be shipped to concentration camps. The Volm are holding Tom.

Weaver goes into his tent, but feels weak. He grabs his arm as he tips over. Jeanne helps him take a nitroglycerine pill for his heart. He's been taking them for a few months, but begs her not to tell anyone.

Cochise shows up with help to move people. Pope wants to fight, but the Volm are armed with superior weapons. Cochise tells Weaver he's just following orders. Weaver has no choice but to tell his people to lay down their weapons.

Pope is angry. "Congratulations, Colonel. The Volm have just done what the fish heads never could: brought us to our knees," he says.

On the Volm ship, Tom seethes over Cochise's betrayal. The Commander tells Tom that no species they have "liberated" has ever resisted relocation and they're confused by the humans' "tenacity." Tom makes a pitch for the human spirit, saying they'd rather die than have their rights taken away. He asks again that they be allowed to fight.

The commander struggles with questioning his orders and tells Tom they'll talk further.

Hal checks on Lourdes, who is ravaged by the Espheni worms in her head. She screams at him, pleading for him to take them out. He promises he'll find a way. Maggie suggests they might have to put Lourdes "out of her misery," so that Karen can't track them.

Cochise returns to lead them. They're reunited with Tom.

They're all stunned when Cochise leads them to a cache of weapons and tells them they're free to go, they just have to leave Boston right away.

Tom notes they'll probably end up in the Volm's way, but says he hopes they meet again.

Cochise and his father have never left an indigenous people in harm's way, but hope the humans are different and will survive.

The remainder of the 2nd Mass heads out on foot. Maggie revels in the fact the war isn't over.

Suddenly, Ben tells everyone to stop. Something big is coming. Lourdes collapses, twitching. A beamer ship lands nearby.

Karen walks toward them, waving a white flag. She says they need to talk.

"It's about the Volm," she says.

"I am confident there will be more unpleasant discoveries about the Volm. This war has gone on for centuries and it will continue for a long time to come. And as you know from your own history, there might be a day when our interests will coincide, so I want you to know my door will always be open," she says.

To prove her good faith, she says she's brought a gift.

"That's funny, I have a gift for you," Tom says.

He shoots her. Her skitters attack, but Tom, Weaver, Hal and Maggie take them out.

Karen reaches out to Hal as she bleeds on the ground. She tells him she's sorry. He goes to hear her out, but Maggie shoots her twice more to finish her off.

Tom watches the Espheni ship fly away, then turns around to see Anne standing there. He asks about Lexi. They didn't do anything to her, but....

Tom sees a six-year-old girl. It's Lexi.

In the morning, there's clear tension between Hal and Maggie over her shooting Karen.

Kadar isn't surprised over what's happening with Lexi, saying he saw hints of it in her DNA. Anne doesn't remember anything about her captivity.

They plan to return to Charleston, and maybe look for Hathaway's people to form a new human resistance movement.

Tom notices Lexi checking on Lourdes, who is in a cage in the back of a truck. Lexi puts her hands through the grate to Lourdes' face. Tom and Weaver watch in stunned silence as

the worms infecting Lourdes pour out of her eyes and into Lexi's hands. And then Lexi calmly crushes them to dust.



# **Season Four**





## Ghost In The Machine

Season 4

Episode Number: 31

Season Episode: 1

Originally aired: Sunday June 22, 2014  
Writer: David Eick  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Peter Shinkoda (Dai), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne), Brad Kelly (Lyle), Megan Danso (Deni)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Disiree Ross (Mira), Dakota Daulby (Kent), Matriya Scarrwener (Shiela), Nicole LaPlaca (Young Woman), Bruce Crawford (Vagrant), Ali Milner (Girl), Zachary Choe (Young Boy), Julia Torraine (Dark Haired Little Girl)  
Summary: We find the remaining 2nd Mass outside of Charleston when they are suddenly under attack from a new Espheni threat, dangerously different from anything they have previously faced. Finding themselves separated from each other, The Masons must find ways to survive by building new friendships and acquiring new skills and abilities.



Tom, Anne, Ben and Matt trudge up a hill in a caravan on a bright sunny day. They've been marching for 22 days. The rest of the group, including Pope and Captain Weaver, along with Tector and Anthony, reach the crest of the hill and the group is happy to see Charleston down below.

Anne and Tom's daughter Lexi is the size of an eight-year-old now. She pauses and announces: "We don't all have to die here."

Seconds later, alien warships swoop overhead and drop giant spike-like structures into the ground. They open and activate, laying an electronic lattice around the group as mechs close in and attach. The 2nd Mass is quickly picked apart. Tom gives the order for everyone to run but another force field stops them.

Tom and Anne are separated when a mech torches a line of fire between them. Tom tries to collect his sons as he takes aim at the mechs. Tom is knocked to his feet by a powerful blast. He looks up and sees Matt running toward him with Lyle – but a force field pops up in front of Lyle and he essentially evaporates as he hits it.

Stunned on the ground, Tom yells at Matt to run, then he passes out.

Four Months Later

Inside an old building, Tom tries to sketch out the words to the Declaration of Independence. It becomes clear he's in captivity. He hears an angry voice coming from the floor below him and realizes it's Captain Weaver.

Outside the fortress they're in, the city is in ruins and people fight in the streets over food. A flying alien swoops in and grabs a man off the streets.

Down the street, Tector and Hal prepare to try to disable the electric force field by shorting it out, as they say Tom told them to, but the field just absorbs the metal they throw it. They need more electricity to short it, but that's in short supply.

In a forest, Anne runs drills on assembling weapons. Anthony tries to talk her down. The Volm came and picked up the rest of their kind three months ago, she isn't holding out much hope. Anthony makes a plea to Anne to let the men sleep. Anne has been running things and gets word a truck with confiscated ammo is coming through in the morning.

Meanwhile, Ben wakes up in a repurposed home furnishing store, hooked to an IV. He finds Maggie, who tells him he was in a coma. When he asks about Lexi, she tells him he won't believe it.

Maggie shows Ben the nice, clean mall in Chinatown where they're safe. Vegetables grow in planters and kids play on playgrounds. Lourdes joins them, fully recovered from her alien invasion. She explains to Ben that the Espheni haven't attacked their compound, which is devoted to peace.

There is a lush Japanese garden and Lourdes introduces Ben to Lexi, who is now a young woman with bright blonde hair and green eyes. She's wearing a necklace with intersecting circles that she explains means unity for "all three of us."

Lexi explains that she is going to protect him. When she walks away, he gets dizzy. He tells her he wants to leave, but she promises they'll be safe.

Out on the streets, Tom conducts surveillance on the aliens while a crowd of people fight over a food drop, with Pope muscling in. (It's not immediately clear why he's not in his cell anymore.)

Tom covers his face and rides up on the group on a motorcycle, using a flame thrower to cow Pope into sharing food.

When the aliens swoop in, Tom follows their movements and takes note of where the aliens come from, then he speeds off.

Back in his cell, Tom works on a map he has hidden, noting where the aliens came from. He hears Weaver yelling from his room about losing his daughter Jean.

Tom tries to reason with him, explaining that the aliens are feeding them and even though Tom has been in solitary for two months, he's being well taken care of. He questions what they want with him and surmises the aliens need them.

Elsewhere, Matt is among a group of tween children dressed in Hitler youth-style outfits who are forced to watch Espheni propaganda. They are reworded with food for spouting pro-Espheni drivel about how the Espheni are there to help them and taught to keep each other in line. They are clean and kept in a former university.

Back in the concentration camp, Tector and Hal find Pope surrounded by loot in an abandoned mansion, watching Gilligan's Island. They ask him for his generator, and when he says no, they take it.

He follows them out into the street and takes on Hal, who he easily overpowers. Finally, Pope backs off but a bystander takes note of the generator.

Back in the woods, Anne's group lays charges to detonate a bridge before the truck carrying ammo drives across. But when it fails to explode, Anne grabs a man's shirt and makes a Molotov cocktail of sorts, then she runs in front of the truck and throws it at the cab, which explodes.

Her group opens up the back of the truck but finds it's not full of ammo - it's packed with frightened children.

At the "re-education camp," Matt pulls a girl who objected aside and explains she has to keep those thoughts to herself. Matt's supervisor watches to make sure he gets her in line.

Back in solitary, Weaver gets a metal leg of his bed free and prepares to try to take on his skitter guard. Tom pleads with him to cool it, saying he'll just get himself killed and Tom is going to need him soon.

Weaver crumples to the floor, barely holding it together.

Out in the woods, Anne plans to follow the road the truck was on in the hopes of finding her daughter.

Under cover of darkness, Tom meets with the Volm, Chochise on opposite sides of the force field. Cochise explains the Volm had to leave to defend their families in another galaxy. He says the Espheni are building a power source that would help them control humanity forever. Cochise explains he can't engage the enemy. Tom asks him to look for Matt, Ben, Anne and Lexi. Cochise tells him the "ghetto camps" are worldwide and the human race is facing extinction.

The bystander who watched Hal's beatdown by Pope approaches Hal and Tector and introduces himself, explaining that he's broken out of camps like this several times.

Tom makes his way back into his solitary confinement cell, through an elevator shaft and hidden passageways. Weaver sees his return. Tom explains that he's been gathering intel on the enemy, but isn't ready to make a move just yet.

Back in Chinatown, Ben asks Maggie where his guns are. He can't believe she's bought into the peace talk.

He wonders what happens when a mech finds the place. Maggie takes him to a powerless mech in the square and explains that Lexi told everyone to wait when it entered and then it was struck dead by a bolt of lightning. Maggie thinks Lexi might have the answer to ending the war.

In his dorm room at night, Matt addresses his peers, including the new girl. He explains they're pretending to go along, "then we're going to screw these guys hard."

Back in Chinatown, Lexi sits an altar. She plays with a moonbeam streaming through the window and is able to harness its light.

Meanwhile, Anne wakes up with a start from a memory of her time on the Espheni trip.

In his room, Tom tells Weaver he needs a distraction for his escape plan so he can get the 2nd Mass back together. Weaver is in.

Out in the streets, someone spraypaints an emblem of Tom's mask and goggles disguise, calling him "Ghost." On a Volm ship, one receives orders: "Bring me the vigilante immediately or we exterminate every last one of them."



# The Eye

Season 4  
Episode Number: 32  
Season Episode: 2

Originally aired: Sunday June 29, 2014  
Writer: Carol Barbee  
Director: Sergio Mimica-Gezzan  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Megan Danso (Deni), Bryce Hodgson (Guest Star), Desiree Ross (Mira), Dakota Daulby (Kent), Joshua J. Ballard (Skip), Woody Jeffreys (Dick), Matriya Scarrwener (Sheila), Nicole LaPlaca (Young Woman), Michael Antonakos (Alex), Christopher Pearce (Second Ghost)  
Summary: Tom faces an impossible decision when the Espheni plan is revealed to him. Meanwhile, Weaver and Pope seek the great escape from the Espheni prison; Matt tries to hide his true allegiance; and Anne searches for her daughter.



Alien ships hover over the internment camps and the human prisoners down below. Tom waits for one to pass, then sneaks out of his isolation cell. He throws a brick down to the force field wall below and sees it get incinerated. Suddenly, he hears a woman screaming at a new flying wasp-like alien that's trying to keep her from getting food from her baby.

Someone dressed as the Ghost tries to intervene but is beaten back, then Tom, the real Ghost, rides up on his bike and uses his flame flower to fry the bug. The

crowd cheers for him. Tom races back to his cell, where Weaver is in a glum mood.

Tom has three quarters of the camp mapped, but he can't figure out where the skitters are coming from behind a church. He needs a bird's eye view.

They're distracted by shouts and cries below, then skitters come for them and toss Tom and Weaver into the street. "Did they just lock us out of solitary?" Weaver asks. They regroup with Hal and Tector, who tell them the hornet aliens are taking all the kids, including Jeannie Weaver and possibly Matt.

A harnessed young man is lowered down from the ship above and he issues an edict: the food drops will stop until they capture and turn over the Ghost. The solitary wards were emptied so the "most dangerous criminals" could try to track him down.

Tom is ready to martyr himself, but Weaver thinks they should go to Pope for food for everyone, figuring he has it hoarded.

Hal reports to his dad that their tunneling efforts have only run into the force field below ground, so Hal has changed their plans.

Out in the woods, Anne is determined to follow the road the Espheni truck carrying children was on. Anthony, Deni and the people following her are weak from marching, but she's hoping to find Lexi. They're interrupted by a skitter, which they quickly wound.

Back in China Town, Ben talks to Dr. Kadar, who tells him that Lexi may look 21, but she's barely a year old, and she's dying because of her rapid aging. Kadar tried to monitor her alien-human DNA, but after Lexi stopped the mech, Lourdes wouldn't let Kadar near her anymore.

Back at the re-education camp, Matt passes the leader, Kent's, questioning then sits as he leader quizzes a girl named Sheila about his plans to infiltrate her insurgent mother's camp.

In the concentration camp, Weaver follows Pope and demands his stash. Pope is ready to fight him for it, when four other guys come down with the same idea. Except they don't plan to distribute his food, they want it for themselves. When one pulls a knife, Pope attacks. Weaver near chokes one to death, but stop himself.

Hal takes Tom to meet the prison escape artist from South Africa, Dingaana Botha. He tells Tom that to go over the green force field you need a Faraday suit, that allows electricity to flow around the wearer. He needs copper to build more.

Bmotha tells Tom about seeing a tether coming from an alien ship, which he thinks could be a power supply.

As Pope and Weaver lick their wounds, Pope confesses his entire stash was just eight cans of beans. Weaver is ready to fight, but hears a noise.

Back with the physicist, Tom reaches Cochise on the short wave radio. Cochise tells him they have confirmed the Espheni are constructing a new power station – a weapon. Cochise says he can't get Tom food, but knows where some is outside the camp. Cochise tells Tom he found Matt at the re-education camp, and agrees to try to get him.

Out in the woods, Deni translates for the wounded skitter as Anne interrogates it. The skitter tells her about the re-education camp, and the New Order of Espheni and human together, led by "the Hybrid." Anne shows it a picture of Lexi, but gets angry when it doesn't have more information. She stabs it to death as Deni screams.

In China Town, Lourdes tries to stop Ben from seeing Lexi because he was talking to Kadar, whom she calls a "non-believer."

Alone with Lexi, Ben tells her Kadar is worried about her. He gets annoyed when she spouts ethereal non-sense, and when she responds angrily, he feels her power as the wind blows and water ripples nearby. But she calms down and agrees to see Kadar.

Back in the camp, Tom checks in with Hal before donning his Ghost gear to give himself up. Tom rides out into the square and waits for the alien ship to come overhead. He removes his mask and waits as the ship raises him into the sky with its tentacles.

The harnessed young man from before asks Tom to join their effort against a dangerous force that's coming. Their new plan involves harnessing adults, stripping them of free will. The Espheni promises to go after Tom's family first if he doesn't agree to join them.

Down in the camp, Weaver and Pope from the edge of the wall.

Hal and others don Ghost masks and take on the persona of the Ghost, launching grenades and using his flame throwing. Tom watching the aliens surveillance and notices an underground hatch near the church where the aliens are clustering. He memorizes the schematics of the ship and the power tether.

Matt and his new friend, Mira, hold hands on their way to another covert meeting, but something inside right when they reach their dorm. Matt sends Mira away and looks for his friend, Skip. Kent shows up and tells Matt that Skip graduated and a new boy named Hector will be joining them.

Lexi lets Kadar draw her blood, but Lourdes find them and gets territorial and angry. Ben tries to send Lourdes away as Lexi tells her Kadar had her permission. When Lourdes attacks Ben, Lexi gets angry and the room starts vibrating. A high pitched noise sends her vial of blood flying.

Later, Lexi is resting. Ben tells Maggie that he's going to protect Lexi, especially from Lourdes.

When Ben goes to check on Lexi, she's no longer in her bed.

Out on the road, Anne checks in with Deni. She tells Anne that the skitter feared something from the west, which Anne thinks means that's where she'll find Lexi.

Ben follows Lexi in the middle of the night and finds her begging someone to take away her powers. The someone stands up, and is revealed to be an Espheni.

Back in camp, Tom is reunited with Hal, Weaver and Botho. He tells them he made a deal with the Espheni not to fight anymore. "We're getting out of here, all the way out," Tom says.





# Exodus

Season 4

Episode Number: 33

Season Episode: 3

Originally aired: Sunday July 6, 2014  
Writer: Josh Pate  
Director: Mikael Salomon  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Ryan Robbins (Tector)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Jessy Schram (Karen), Laci J Mailey (Jeanne), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Megan Danso (Deni), Desiree Ross (Mira), Dakota Daulby (Kent), Rebecca Husain (Martha), Raw Leiba (Cain), Daniel Martin (Bill), Matriya Scarrwener (Sheila)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass orchestrates a complex scheme to escape from the Espheni Ghetto. Meanwhile, Maggie confronts Lexi in Chinatown; Matt tries to dissuade Mira from taking part in a risky escape plan; Anne has a flashback about her time in the Espheni Tower.



Tom leads a pack of skitters through the camp, getting them to follow him to a building. He climbs up the stairs inside to get a good view of the green force field wall, and gets worried when it isn't down as planned.

60 hours earlier Tom thinks the skitterization of the humans will begin in the next 48 hours. He reviews his plan with Hal to cut the power tether to the alien ship to bring down the wall. "When we get out of here, we're going to take the fight to them," Tom says.

Tom checks in with the escape artist Dingaan Botha on the progress of the

construction of the copper suit that is supposed to help him scale the wall to cut the tether.

Back in Chinatown, Ben tells Maggie about seeing Lexi meet with an Espheni. Maggie straps her guns back on and Ben tries to convince her not to go off half-cocked.

At the re-education camp, Ken the creepy leader introduces Sheila, who is back from her time in the field. She introduces her parents Bill and Martha and her dad says he's accepted the new paradigm and is ready to accept a better world with the Espheni. As they're led away to an adult camp, her mother yells at her, asking how she could betray them. Matt claps dutifully in his seat.

In Chinatown, Ben confronts Lexi about meeting with an Espheni. Lexi readily admits it and says she's the bridge between the species. When Maggie gets angry, Lexi grabs her wrist and easily breaks it.

Maggie draws her gun and demands answers. Lexi says the Espheni are a part of her and they want peace. She warns Maggie that if she raises her gun again, Chinatown will no longer be safe.

Tom reviews the plan with Botha, telling him he plans to use the same approach Geronimo used to defeat the Mexican army, drawing them out with a distraction into an ambush. Botha is

worried about only having the 90 seconds his suit will last to climb the wall and set the bomb, then hope it's strong enough to cut the power.

Anne, Anthony and Deni make their way through the woods toward the west to find Lexi. Anne is weak from passing up her food rations and gets light-headed and passes out.

In the re-education camp dorm, Mira worries to Matt that if she doesn't leave soon she'll crack under the brainwashing. He urges her to go along until they graduate and will be released on their own. That night, she hides a pair of stolen wire cutters under an empty bunk. The next morning Ken comes in with guards, who toss the beds until they find the wire cutters. When he demands someone confess or they'll all be punished, Matt takes the blame.

Tom review his plan with Hal, Dingaam, Tector, Pope and Weaver. Tom is meeting with the Espheni, ostensibly to surrender, but instead he'll provoke a confrontation to get them to chase him through the camp, away through Dingaam scaling the wall. Weaver and Pope will provide cover and Hal will lead the people of the camp out through the sewer tunnel. Tom is going to lead his pursuers back to the empty building where he and Weaver were held in solitary, but it will be wired to blow.

Pope does his usual doubt-sowing, but Tom shuts him up.

In Dingaam's lab, Tector builds the ammonium nitrate bomb for the tether.

Hal leads groups of people down into the sewer to wait.

As Anne lies unconscious in the forest, she has a fitful memory about her time on the Espheni ship, when she woke up to an Espheni attached to her pregnant belly like an external umbilical cord, saying the child was theirs.

Tom meets with an Espheni commander as planned on the streets of the camp. He pulls out his flame thrower and fries it then hopes on his bike and drives off, with skitters in pursuit.

Dingaam, Weaver and Pope are ready to go when a piece of debris falls on Dingaam's hand, crushing it. Weaver starts to put on the suit but Dingaam points out with his heart condition he'd get fried. Pope volunteers.

He puts on Dingaam's metal suit and scales the fence wall, with Pope and Weaver providing cover fire. But when Pope gets to the top he drops the backpack carrying the bomb. He climbs down to get it, but Dingaam worries the suit won't last much longer.

An elderly couple takes their time getting down to the sewer, drawing the attention of a skitter.

Pope's suit starts to disintegrate when he gets to the top and he is zapped as he falls to the ground on the other side.

The skitters find the people down in the tunnel and one grabs the elderly man. Hal stabs it then calls for help barricading the door.

Pope comes to on the ground and peels off the smoldering suit. He twists the wires of the bomb together and puts it on the tether then ducks for cover. It explodes, but Pope sees that the center cord of the tether remains unscathed.

Meanwhile, Tom has most of the pack of skitters on his trail as he heads into the old building. From high above, he sees that the wall isn't down yet.

Pope picks up a piece of shrapnel and starts whacking at the tether until he breaks through.

The wall flickers and comes down.

From six stories up, Tom presses the detonation on his bomb and as the building blows he jumps into the river below.

Anne wakes up in the forest and orders scouts go out looking for Lexi. She can feel she's close.

Outside the re-education camp, Cochise spies as Matt is taken somewhere.

In Chinatown, Lexi tells Ben she can feel they're close.

Moments later, Anne and her people walk into the peaceful town. Anne hugs Ben and recognizes Lexi immediately.

Outside the camp, Tom congratulates Pope, who tells Tom he should trust more.

It's dark and they're out in the woods, but Weaver thinks he hears something. An alien head watches them, then ducks.

## Evolve or Die

Season 4

Episode Number: 34

Season Episode: 4

Originally aired: Sunday July 13, 2014  
Writer: Raven Metzner  
Director: Bill Eagles  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Laci J. Mailey (Jeanne)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Megan Danso (Deni), John DeSantis (Shak), Desiree Ross (Mira), Dakota Daulby (Kent), Mira Sorvino (Sara)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass finds refuge in a Volm hideout, but tensions with the Volm continue to rise. Meanwhile, Tom teams with Weaver and Cochise in a search for Matt, and Anne reconnects with Lexi.



Tom, Hal and Weaver make their way to the rendezvous point with Cochise. Weaver thinks he sees something, but dismisses it.

They meet with Cochise and his second in command, Shaq. Cochise tells Tom they found Matt at a children's camp. Weaver signals for the 71 survivors to follow him.

At the re-education center. Ken visits Matt in lock-up and spews his propaganda about the Espheni, then asks for the names of the people who were going to escape with Matt.

At the rendezvous, Cochise tells Tom

about their drones, a fraction of the size of a house fly, that helped them find the re-education camp.

Tom leaves Hal in charge and leaves with Weaver and Cochise to go find Matt. As they walk, something follows their progress. Again, Weaver thinks he hears it. He takes out a knife and goes stalking. Cochise thinks he's being erratic.

Whatever it is hides from the, its heart pounding.

In Chinatown, Lexi tries to explain things to her mom, saying a path has been set for her. They're interrupted by an angry Anthony, being followed by Lourdes yelling about his gun. Anne asks him to set up camp outside the perimeter.

Hal talks to the people who used to live in the area to find out where they can scavenge. One suggestion is farther than he wants to go, and he remembers Tom telling him not to leave the area. Pope taunts him for needing daddy's permission and the next thing he knows, Pope is speeding off in a truck.

Cochise, Weaver, and Tom scope out the re-education camp. The thing stalking them crouches nearby.

Suddenly, it springs out and attacks Cochise. It's the size of a person but moves like an animal. They scare it off, but Cochise is wounded. He goes into a regenerative state – he passes

out to heal. Weaver confesses to Tom that he thinks he saw the thing, which bleeds black, when they were leaving the concentration camp, but he thought he might be imagining it.

Dingaam plays Hal a message he found on the radio about a "place of peace." Hal recognizes Lourdes' voice. Tector joins them and says the Volm have recon from their drones that says the Espheni will be at their location within 24 hours.

Pope pulls up to farm and finds dozens of cans of gas in the garage. He's preparing to take some when someone blasts at his truck.

A woman warns him off her gas and threatens him. They go back and forth until she invites him at gunpoint to have a beer.

Inside, she wants to know where he came from. She used to be a graphic designer, but hated her job. She says the apocalypse is the best thing that ever happened to her, now she lives each moment and takes what she wants when she wants it. She informs Pope she's taking his truck. She spiked his beer and he quickly passes out.

Later outside Chinatown, Anne tries to process her now grown daughter. Ben and Maggie tell her about Lexi's deal with the Epheni. Anne is ready to hunt the Espheni down when Ben preaches caution and suggests they try to learn about Lexi instead.

Pope wakes up tied to a chair. The woman is packing up to leave when they see mech's searchlights outside. Pope very quickly explains that he knows how to kill them, but she'll have to let him go. "I'm Sarah, by the way," she says.

At night, Tom and Weaver sneak into the re-education camp dorm. Tom wakes up a kid to ask about Matt, promising he'll get them out. Instead, the kid blows his alert whistle.

Pope leads Sarah to the truck and they speed off through mech fire.

Tom and Weaver regroup in the hall and run into Mira, who leads Tom downstairs.

Weaver looks around the hall and sees black blood on the ground. Suddenly, the creature grabs him.

Ken finds Matt in his cell and asks him about the intruders calling his name. When Matt fights back, Ken starts to choke him. Tom finds him just in time and pulls Ken off. Matt stops Tom from beating him to a pulp.

Later outside, Mira creates a distraction blowing her whistle and running the other direction so Tom and Matt can escape.

Weaver comes to and sees the creature staring him down. He thinks he hears his daughter Jeannie's voice, but she pounces, then flies off him to attack an Espheni. When the skitter gets the better of her, Weaver stabs it.

Weaver looks at the creature – it is his daughter Jeannie. He cradles her.

On the road, Sarah stops the truck and tells Pope to get out. He reveals he took the shells out of her shotgun, so he takes the keys and tells her to get out. She asks if he's really going to leave her to be attacked.

"Don't tempt me," he says. "What do you think I've been doing this whole time?" she asks coyly. He lets her back in the truck.

Back at the rendezvous, Hal tells the camp survivors they have to move out in the morning.

Pope and Sarah pull up. When Hal yells at Pope for leaving, Sarah yells back, asking who put Hal in charge. Hal uses a gentler approach for Pope, saying he appreciates what he did, just not how he did it. Then he tells them about all the mechs nearby and that they have to leave.

Back at Chinatown, Anne, Maggie and Ben follow Lexi to her meeting with the Espheni. Anne tells Lexi she thinks they are using her. She wants to talk to the Espheni, but Lexi thinks Anne will hurt it.

The Espheni arrives and uses Ben's spikes to talk through him, saying he believes they might be able to live together in peace. When it calls Anne "mother," she recognizes it from the ship as the one who experimented on her. Anne yells at Anthony in the shadows to restrain the alien, but Lexi gets angry at Anne for lying.

She uses her powers to rip the guns out of everyone's hands, but the Espheni urges her not to give in to violence. When Lexi calms down, the Espheni breaks contact with Ben and Ben announces he could tell it was lying.

At the rendezvous, Hal spray paints something his history professor father will understand, but aliens won't: Croatoan, the only word that remained when the colony at Roanoke disappeared, that will signal abandon camp.

Shaq and the Volm head out with Hal and the 2nd Mass toward Lourdes' coordinates on the broadcast.

Outside the re-education camp, Cochise has healed. Weaver stumbles to the meeting point with Tom, telling him about Jeannie and that she saved his life before she died.

Weaver says the Espheni plan to skitterize people is flawed because they can't control us.

Gemenus, the head Espheni, does the alien version of a teleconference with the Espheni meeting with Lexi. The Lexi alien informs him he has total control of her and she's more powerful than they thought. He taunts Gemenus about his skitterization experiment not going as planned.

The Lexi alien comes out of the teleconference and is tied up, with Lexi looking on adoringly nearby.



## Mind Wars

Season 4

Episode Number: 35

Season Episode: 5

Originally aired: Sunday July 20, 2014  
Writer: Bruce Marshall Romans  
Director: Nathaniel Goodman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Recurring Role: Doug Jones (Cochise), Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha)  
Guest Stars: Gil Bellows (Nick Phillips), Aaron Douglas (Cooper Phillips), John DeSantis (Shak), Mira Sorvino (Sara)  
Summary: Tom runs into some strangers in the woods. Hal tries to lead the remaining survivors from Volm and 2nd Mass.



Tom Mason crawls through the thick grass. He's about to shoot a rabbit, but Matt stops him, even though they haven't eaten in three days.

They finally reach the rendezvous point and find it empty. But they see Hal's "Croatoan," message with numbers that Tom figures are coordinates. He checks a map and finds it's 30 miles to the southwest.

Matt turns on the radio and hears a fragment of Lourdes' message. They duck for cover as a skitter searches for them. Tom notices a tall Espheni behind it and he and Matt make their way out the door

after creating a diversion. The Espheni tracking them is the one Tom flambéed with his flame thrower.

Out on the road, Hal and Tector hit a mech sentry roadblock. Pope and Dingaan return with bad news about more mech roadblocks. Hal suggests they need more intel and wants to consult the Volm.

Meanwhile, back at the Croatoan rendezvous, Tom, Weaver and Matt check in with Cochise. He says he has to head back to his men to follow progress on stopping the Espheni power source. He promises to find them again soon.

Back outside Chinatown, Anne and Maggie have the Lexi Espheni strung up in chains and Anne interrogates it through Ben. He insists he's acting alone and Lexi is very important. The Espheni does something to Ben through his spikes and they stop the interrogation.

Weaver, Tom and Matt see people grilling something and decide to approach them. After a few wary moments, the men, brothers Nick (Gil Bellows) and Cooper Phillips, welcome Tom when he introduces himself and they realize he's the Ghost. They share their food.

Back in Chinatown, Lexi is angry at Anne for breaking her word and taking the Espheni captive. Lexi uses her powers and starts choking Anne, only stopping when Lexi herself collapses.

After nightfall, Tom and Weaver talk to Nick, who used to work at Goldman Sachs. He says his brother was a sous chef. Tom notices they are really well equipped. Nick says they came across

a well stocked Mormon farm and took everything they could carry. Nick says they escaped from a skitter farm. He describes seeing the people as they were being tested on, which upsets Weaver as he thinks of his skitterized daughter, Jeanne.

Cooper hurls a knife near Nick, showing off, but it makes Tom nervous. Tom says goodnight and he and Weaver briefly confer, agreeing they don't trust their new friends. Tom takes the first watch.

Hal meets with Shaq, Cochise's second-in-command Volm. Hal wants to use their bug sized drones to track mech movements, but Shaq says they're busy searching for the Espheni power source. He has a "highly irregular" suggestion instead.

Nick joins Tom standing guard. Tom is openly skeptical, bringing up the Mormon farmhouse again and saying it's suspicious. They hear shots from their camp and Nick knocks Tom out. Back at camp, Cooper empties his gun into Weaver and Matt's sleeping bags, gritting his teeth as he fires.

Later, Weaver checks the sleeping bags they set up. He promises Matt they'll find his dad.

Nick and Cooper take Tom somewhere, telling him there's a bounty on his head. When Tom asks, Cooper says he shot Matt and Weaver while they slept. Tom drags his foot as they walk to leave a clear trail.

Back in Chinatown, Dr. Kadar checks on Lexi, who is unconscious and feverish in bed. Lourdes blames Anne for upsetting her. Dr. Kadar checks his thermometer, which reads 118. They assume it's broken. Lexi wakes up enough to say she's on fire.

Back at the mech sentry line, Hal waits for one to pass on its usual schedule, then he, Shaq and Tector string a rope across the road. When the next one passes, Hal walks out behind it and flings a rock at its head, then runs.

Sara (Mira Sorvino) joins Pope in his truck, wanting pointers on how to fight back. She joins him for his ride.

The mech stops just before its tripped by the rope, but then Pope nails it with his truck, knocking it down. Shaq runs up and removes something like a mechanical heart/processing core from it.

Weaver easily follows Tom's tracks. Matt is fired up and wants revenge. Weaver talks him down, telling him not to let his hate destroy him. Matt says he understands, but he still wants to hurt them.

On the road, Tom tries to turn Cooper against his brother as Nick continues to bark orders. Tom gets close enough to Cooper to head butt him, so Cooper decks him in return.

They stop for awhile, and Nick leaves Cooper to watch Tom. Tom starts talking to Cooper, telling him about his children, including Matt. He keeps reminding Cooper that the one he killed was named Matt.

Tom gets to him. Cooper tells him he had two kids, but they died.

From the trees nearby, Weaver lines up his rifle scope on Cooper. Matt stops him and Weaver thinks he's upset. But Matt wants to take the shot. Weaver lets him line it up, but Weaver is glad when Matt can't take the shot. After reassuring Matt that his hesitation makes him human and that's good, Weaver moves up to get a better shot.

Anne goes to the bound Espheni, demanding he help Lexi.

Maggie and Ben have a moment as she checks on him. Anne realizes the Espheni isn't going to help her and starts wailing on it with a board.

Suddenly in the other room, Ben drops to the floor screaming and deep bruises appear on him as he screams out "flower."

Maggie races to Anne to stop and relays the message. She knows what it means.

When Nick returns, he tells Tom they'll send up a flare and meet the Espheni soon. Tom asks Nick how he escaped the skitter farm, and guesses that Nick traded their friends and family for their freedom.

Cooper is horrified when he realizes his brother traded his son's lives. When Cooper pulls a gun on him, Nick insists the kids wouldn't have survived long and he did it to save them.

Nick thinks Cooper won't shoot because they're brothers. He's wrong. Cooper shoots Nick.

Then he turns to Tom, saying there's nothing to live for. He's ready to fire when Weaver takes Cooper out.



Out on the road, Shaq hardwires the Mech, jumpstarting just its operating system. He patches into the Espheni command broadcast and shows Hal real time locations for all the Espheni, including a safe path to Chinatown.

Anne gives her daughter tea made from a special flower that Lexi showed her. Lexi whispers something to Lourdes and she leaves.

Lexi asks her mom to promise not to hurt her Espheni again, but Anne won't promise it. "I don't want to choose between you and him," Lexi says to her mother, ominously.

Hal and Dingaam reach the edges of Chinatown.

Still on the road, Matt asks Tom why Cooper killed Nick. Tom tells him they weren't real brothers, because real brothers look out for each other.

Later that night, Maggie busts into Lexi's room and tells Anne that someone knocked out Anthony and let the Espheni go.

Anne asks Lexi how she could do such a thing. "Because he's also my father," she says.



## Door Number Three

Season 4

Episode Number: 36

Season Episode: 6

Originally aired: Sunday July 27, 2014  
Writer: Melissa Glenn  
Director: Jonathan Frakes  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Jessy Schram (Karen), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha)  
Summary: Tom reunites with his family and the 2nd Mass, but the reunion celebration is cut short when Lexi falls victim to a health crisis. Before long, her illness stirs up tension within the ranks as family members clash over how best to treat her.



Ben has a steamy dream about getting it on with Maggie, in which Hal comes in with a bloody wound asking where he was. Ben is awoken by Maggie pounding on his door. She tells him about the Espheni escaping and that they think Lexi helped.

Lexi summons Lourdes to her room, and asks why humans fear change. She tells Lourdes her father is coming. When Lexi asks to be alone, she reveals her hand is turning slimy.

Outside the walls to Chinatown, Hal thinks he sees something in the moon. He's interrupted by two men with guns.

But then Tom and Weaver arrive and tell the guards to disarm. The Mason family has a reunion as Hal greets his dad and Matt and then Ben and Anne join them. Then Anne pulls Tom aside to try and explain what's happened to their daughter.

Meanwhile inside, Lourdes brings Lexi some tea and is freaked out by what she finds: Lexi sleeping in a giant glowing chrysalis.

Meanwhile, the members of the 2nd Mass check out Chinatown, including the stationary Mech that Lexi stopped. They're greeted with food and clothes.

Tom and Anne try to have a quiet moment, but Lourdes interrupts. She takes them to see Lexi. Anne freaks out and wants to cut Lexi out of the chrysalis, but Tom cautions her that they have to figure out what they're dealing with first – they don't want to hurt her. Anne tells him about Lexi thinking an Espheni is her father and conspiring with them.

Out in the courtyard, Hal finds Maggie. Before he can get into his speech about wanting her back, she kisses him. Ben interrupts to bring them to Lexi.

The Masons meet in front of chrysalis, where Kadar compares her to a butterfly. Anne mentions she's been having memories of Karen and being inside a cocoon. Kadar suggests trying to jump Anne's memory to see how she escaped the cocoon unharmed.

In his makeshift doctor's office in an abandoned eyeglasses store, he injects her with something and talks her back into her memories of her children. Anne remembers being with her son Sammy seconds before the attack and watching him die in front of her.

When she wakes up, Tom thinks she should stop, but Anne is resolved to do what she can to save her other child. She doubles the dosage and injects herself over Tom's objections.

Tom goes to check on ChrysaLexi. Weaver comes to check on him. When Weaver touches the cocoon, it burns his hand. Hal comes in to talk plans for stopping the skitterization camps. Tom says he needs to take a day to be with his family.

Later that night, Maggie briefs the 2nd Mass on Lexi, saying she is a threat to everyone, and they have to do something if they want to survive. Hal joins them. Maggie explains Lexi's powers and that she's been meeting with an Espheni. Pope shouts out that they should kill her. Tom joins them.

He argues he's capable of making tough choices, but nothing will happen until they get more information. Tom takes a gun to make his point.

Hal follows his dad, who lays into him for plotting against his sister. Hal reminds him of the Espheni warping Karen into a threat and Tom recognizing that and shooting her when Hal couldn't. But Tom is determined to protect his daughter.

Ben finds Maggie, asking her to remember how happy she was when he first came to Chinatown and how she told him the Mech stopping was a miracle. He pleads with her to remember that and have hope, but she refuses.

Anne remembers being on the Espheni ship and Karen telling Anne that Lexi is her creation and in time she'll become just like Karen, but better, and together they will end the war. Karen told Anne that Lexi needs her for now, but soon she'll be all Karen's. Karen put her in the cocoon with the baby and sealed them in.

Anne wakes up and starts hyperventilating that she can't save Lexi.

Then she sees Kadar trying to wake her and realizes she's still unconscious.

Tom finds Lourdes and asks her about Lexi. She tells him that Lexi is uniting them. Tom asks for her help protecting Lexi, but Lourdes doesn't think she needs it.

Hal vents to Dinga. Shaq the Volm joins them, saying that when Espheni hatchlings emerge they're at their most violent and in the worst case, she might kill them all. He tells Hal about his men encountering cocoons and getting burned to death when they tried to cut into one.

By Lexi, Tom finally sees how badly Weaver's hand is burnt. But then Al, Pope and Tector come leading a horde of people ready to kill Lexi. Inside, Lexi's cocoon glows bright red and makes a loud thrumming noise. Tom, Ben, Matt and Weaver stand guard by Lexi.

Weaver tells Tom that from a military standpoint, she's a threat, but as a father, he would die before he let anyone hurt her.

Tom confronts the gathered horde. Hal and Pope argue something needs to be. They ask Maggie to repeat what she said, but instead Maggie says she's not ready to say Lexi needs to be killed. Maggie joins Ben standing against Hal.

Hal tells Tom the Volm are leaving. He reminds Tom what he told him when he came off the Espheni ship, that Hal had to stop him if he ever did anything to put everyone at risk. But Tom says he'd never risk everyone and Lexi is still his daughter.

The horde disperses as Tom promises to deal with Lexi by any means necessary if it comes to that.

Back with Kadar, Anne is still having an out of body experience. Kadar injects her with something to try to revive her, but she's still out. Then she sees Lexi sitting next to her. Lexi tells her mom she's sorry about Sammy and she knows Anne wants to save her. Lexi takes her mom's hand and brings her back to her memory on the Espheni ship.

Lexi tells Anne that she'll always need her and she doesn't need to be saved. Lexi helps Anne wake up.

Anne runs to Lexi and tells the group that she won't hurt them. Anne puts her hands on the cocoon, which doesn't hurt her, and assures Lexi that she's there for her.

## Saturday Night Massacre

Season 4  
Episode Number: 37  
Season Episode: 7

Originally aired: Sunday August 3, 2014  
Writer: David Weddle, Bradley Thompson  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Megan Danso (Deni), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Doug Jones (Cochise), Robert Sean Leonard (Roger Kadar), Ryan Robbins (Tector), Mira Sorvino (Sara), Daesha Danielle Usman (Joy)  
Summary: Lexi becomes more powerful and ruthless. Elsewhere, Tom and the 2nd Mass work with the Volm to prevent an Espheni invasion, leading to an all-out battle.



From inside the chrysalexi, she puts her hand out to touch Anne's on the other side. Lexi's eyes open and she starts moving, breaking out of the cocoon. She looks the same except her eyes have changed. She passes out but quickly wakes up and says she has to go.

She lectures the Masons on the violence inherent in humans and says she tried to show them a path to peace, but they rejected it. When Anne asks her about saying she'll always need her family, Lexi explains she didn't mean this one.

Lexi ignores the Masons and starts to walk through the people to leave. Lourdes follows her and begs Lexi to take her with her. Lexi asks her if Lourdes wants her to "set her free," but it turns out they have a slight misunderstanding. Lexi kills Lourdes with her powers instead, paralyzing everyone from stopping her. Then she walks out.

When the day breaks, Anne says a few words about Lourdes. Hal is angry at his dad for not listening to his warnings about Lexi. Tom believes she's a threat now, but Anne still thinks she can be saved.

They go to Dr. Kadar for answers, but all he can guess is that her human and Espheni DNA fused and she's more powerful. They're interrupted by Tector.

Cochise found Anthony out on patrol. Anthony and Bennett were picked up by skitters and taken to the charred overlord, who burned Bennett alive and let Anthony go. Cochise reports their drones have picked up a large Espheni force in the area.

They plan for the invasion, including taking out the bridge into Chinatown to force the Espheni to come from the south. They start constructing a kill zone through what's left of the town with plans to rain thermite on the Espheni.

Sara suggests to Pope that they head out to the Keys instead, but he tells her if she wants to live, she's best sticking near the Masons.

Matt hands out extra ammo, but Ben says he doesn't need it because he's on recon. Then he confesses to Matt that he's going after Lexi because she can help and he thinks he can get through to her.

Maggie finds Hal, who is angry about Lexi. He thinks anyone who falls under the influence of the Espheni should be killed. Maggie points out if she'd taken that attitude, Hal wouldn't be there. But he says then he wouldn't have handed Lexi over to Karen.

Tom and Weaver review the plan, they're ready. Matt confesses that Ben went after Lexi.

In their forward lookout spot, Dingaana and Deni see mechs approaching with the overlord. They're racing for cover when they run into a line of people on their knees, waiting. They're former followers of Lexi, who believe that they'll be spared. They aren't. The mechs mow them down.

Hal, Maggie, Dingaana and Deni wait for the Mechs to walk down their trap. Maggie lights the thermite and it explodes from the Chinese lanterns strung above and melts three mechs. Maggie hangs back to blast a skitter.

Pope leads Sara as skitters close in. Tector save them from one but Pope notices their gas line is leaking. He shouts at everyone to run and it explodes. He finds Sara huddled off to the side, reeling from all the people who have died around them.

Tom and Weaver come out into the wreckage. Deni is hurt, but healing quickly. No one can find Maggie. Tom apologizes to Hal for thinking he could protect them from Lexi, but Hal assures him he loves him. Anne finds Tom and tells him everyone in the barricade was killed.

Meanwhile, outside the fighting, Ben finds Lexi and asks for her help. He tells her what everyone was like before the war, that they were non-violent. He asks her to go back, but she thinks he came this far for a reason. His spikes glow as a ship lands.

With the second wave of Espheni about to come into town, Tom says they have to hide to make them think the explosion took everyone out. Pope suggests the fallout shelter below ground.

They're doing one last sweep of town when Weaver finds Dr. Kadar – he has a giant shard of glass sticking out of his side. Anne, Tom, and Weaver gather around him as he urges them not to give up on Lexi.

Down in the shelter, all the survivors are there except Pope, Sara and Maggie.

Tom wants to go up and kill the charred overlord himself. Everyone thinks this is a terrible idea. He asks Tector to show him how to use his giant Civil War gun. Tector goes up top with him and seems to find gunk in his gun. He sends Tom below for some oil for it, which he doesn't need.

Hal comes back to the shelter, hoping Maggie is there, but she isn't. He can't go back out again, because the mechs arrive.

Tector, the trained sniper, takes careful aim at the charred overlord, but he only nicks him. The overlord calls in a ship to bomb the place, but Cochise takes it out. The ship crashes into the structure where Tector was and he dives for cover. When a skitter comes over to investigate, Tector laughs at him – then blows himself up.

The charred overlord examines what's left of Tector and walks off.

As day breaks, the bodies of the dead are strewn everywhere. Maggie is crushed under a giant beam.

Somewhere in the dark, Tom flicks on his lighter and finds himself buried under a pile of rubble. He checks his head – Tector knocked him out with a wrench.

## A Thing With Feathers

Season 4

Episode Number: 38

Season Episode: 8

Originally aired: Sunday August 10, 2014  
Writer: Ryan Mottesheard  
Director: David Solomon  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Doug Jones (Cochise), Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Treva Etienne (Dingaan Botha), Megan Danso (Deni), Mira Sorvino (Sara), Christie Burke (Elise), Robert Clotworthy (The Monk (voice)), Mireille Urumuri (Idrissa), Michael Ogbewi (Adeleke)  
Summary: Fallout from a destructive alien attack finds the 2nd Mass picking up the pieces and Maggie fighting for her life. Tom and Dingaan, cut off from the group and buried under rubble, seek possible rescue from an enemy ship.



Everyone emerges from the fallout shelter after the Espheni attack to go looking for survivors, including Maggie and Tom.

Sara finds Pope about to smash in the skull of a wounded, trapped skitter and interrupts to kill it herself.

They start digging through rubble, figuring anyone trapped only has about 12 hours. Anne finds Tom's scarf.

Hal finds Maggie crushed under a beam inside a building and starts digging her out. She can't move her legs.

Meanwhile, beneath the rubble, Tom is alive and OK, but in a very small space. He hears someone barely able to talk,

gasping for help. Tom crawls through the gaps in the rubble and finds Dingaan under a giant slab of concrete. Tom uses a piece of rebar to pry the slab up, ordering Dingaan to wiggle out. Tom is able to hold it up just long enough for him to get free.

Ben wakes up to see Lexi (in a red plush velvet evening gown). She tells him they're with the Espheni and a "peaceful solution has begun." She activates his spikes, telling him she wants to show him the future.

Annie directs as Maggie is carried, strapped down to a stretcher.

Weaver directs rescue efforts. Pope loudly announces there's no way Tom is alive, and gets tackled and punched by young Matt in return. Pope is contrite, saying he didn't know Matt was nearby.

Matt tries to figure out where his dad would have gone after taking the shot at the overlord. Weaver offers to help him dig.

In the rubble, Tom and Dingaan come upon the crashed beamer that Cochise shot down. Tom thinks if they can get in it, they can fly it out of the rubble. Dingaan freaks out from claustrophobia and bangs on the ship, but he also manages to find the hatch.

Hal anxiously waits by Maggie. Anne tells Hal that Maggie is paralyzed from the neck down and probably has internal bleeding and there's nothing she can do.

Hal suggests harness spikes, remembering how fast Deni healed. Anne agrees to ask the Volm.

Under the rubble, Tom chews out Dingaana for his unrelenting pessimism and tells him to keep it together.

Tom finds a squishy portal into the ship and sticks his arm in up to his armpit, manipulating tendons to try to get a door to open. Something bites him, and he yanks his hand out, but the door opens.

Lexi takes Ben to see a warehouse full of humans being skitterized and tells him it's the evolution of the species. He argues that it's genocide and she immobilizes him with her powers. He asks if she's going to kill him like she did Lourdes.

She asks Ben to come with her, but he tries to get away.

Lexi remembers her "father" Espheni telling her she would bring peace and tries to reconcile it with Ben's horror.

Back at rubble Chinatown, Cochise examines Deni's spikes and explains to Anne how a transfer of the fluid in them could work – but that it also has huge risks to Deni and Maggie. Anne won't proceed without Maggie's permission.

Pope and Sara patrol the perimeter. She's having a hard time settling after the attack. They find Bennett's charred body, from where the overlord torched him. Pope looks for something to dig a grave.

In the rubble, Matt finds Tector's gun and notes it's been fired. He thinks he hears his dad.

Meanwhile, Tom crawls into the Espheni ship with Dingaana. Tom puts his hands on the walls and gets shocked – a probe latches onto his arm and something digs in his skin. Then he passes out.

When Maggie wakes up, Hal tells her what's going on. She tells him she doesn't want anything alien in her and he has to let her go.

Hal tells Anne that Maggie wants to go ahead.

Anne withdraws the fluid from Deni and injects Maggie.

After covering up Bennett, Sara has settled down and tells Pope she thought they were both going to die last night. He kisses her.

On the Espheni ship, Dingaana uses his belt for a tourniquet to keep the probe from going further up Tom's arm. It's barbed on the inside and is excruciatingly painful when Dingaana pulls it out. They hear a beeping in the ship and Tom thinks they just pulled a pin on a grenade. Dingaana freaks out again.

Anne checks on Maggie and reports that her heart is very weak. Hal confesses Maggie didn't want the injection, but Anne understands. Then Ben returns. Anne wants to go after Lexi but he explains that she's gone over the Espheni side and is presiding over their genocide. She let him go, but he saw into her mind. "The Lexi we knew is gone," he tells Anne.

When Ben sees Maggie, he suggests Anne transplant his spikes into her. He doesn't care about the risk.

Tom drags Dingaana off the Espheni ship, planning to find somewhere to shield them from the blast.

Cochise lends Anne equipment and guides her through removing Ben's spike and putting it into Maggie.

Tom and Dingaana get away from the ship and Dingaana says they're suck because of karma. He tells Tom a story about his young son being buried alive in a pit he was digging for a swimming pool. His wife later drank herself to death out of grief. The Espheni ship beeping reminds him of the heart monitor in the ambulance. He thinks it's is fate that he be buried alive.

Anne has implanted three of Ben's spikes in Maggie but doesn't want to go further. Hal and Anne watch at unconscious Maggie and Ben twitch violently in unison.

Tom tells Dingaana not to lose hope. The Espheni ship counts down and exploded. The blast brings Weaver and Matt, and clears a path down to Dingaana and Tom.

After Tom is brought back up, he's reunited with Anne.

Ben wakes up and is back on his feet. Hal thanks him, but Ben says he didn't do it for Hal.



Later, everyone mourns the people they've lost, with boozy toasts. Sara says good-bye to the old her and tosses out all her pills. Anne and Tom talk about Lexi. She wants to go after her, but Tom isn't sure what they'd find and points out there are other people here who need them.

Hal sees Maggie walking over. She slaps him hard for betraying her – then kisses him just as hard for saving her life. She hugs Ben when she hears what he did.

Tom and Hal see the Espheni ship glowing blue beneath the rubble. They look up and see something green glowing on or in front of the moon. They have no idea what it means.



## Till Death Do Us Part

Season 4

Episode Number: 39

Season Episode: 9

Originally aired: Sunday August 17, 2014  
Writer: Carol Barbee  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Doug Jones (Cochise), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), John DeSantis (Guest star), Desiree Ross (Mira), Dakota Daulby (Kent), Mira Sorvino (Sara), Emily Tennant (Team Leader #2)  
Summary: Tom and a team track the Volm in an attempt to find equipment to work on a crippled airship. Meanwhile, Maggie and Ben inch closer together at camp while Pope and Sara clash.



In the rubble, they try to make sense of the Espheni tech. It's wireless electricity beamed from the moon. Cochise is annoyed that it took so long to figure it out. That means the power source on the moon powers every laser wall in every ghetto, and every skitter factory.

Tom doesn't see any other option than going up to the moon and blowing it up. He quotes JFK introducing the space race to suggest they fly an Espheni beamer to the moon. Cochise says it's not as crazy as it sounds.

In the morning light they get to work clearing all the rubble off the beamer.

Maggie is annoyed from her Espheni spike implants. Anne is in a snit, but helping anyway to support everyone who's supporting Tom. She's mad at him over Lexi, but doesn't want to talk about it.

Cochise drops by and tells Weaver and Tom that there's a Volm supply cache nearby that has blasting tools that can help.

Maggie helps Hal with the digging, then picks up a giant piece of concrete and accidentally hurls it through the air, nearly hitting Sara, who falls and loudly complains about her wrist. Ben offers to help her learn how to control her new technology.

Tom finds Anne angrily packing to go to the supply cache. He tries to get her to talk about why she's angry. She thinks he's given up on Lexi, but he argues he's just being a realist, even though it breaks his heart. Anne has faith, he has hope.

Pope finds Sara raiding the medical supplies, looking for Vicodin. He accuses her of playing up her injury, but she insists her wrist hurts. He tells her he believed her when she announced the "new" Sara was giving up pills. He's disappointed.

Weaver, Tom and Anne and Matt follow Cochise to the weapons cache. He gives them gas masks to handle the potentially lethal chlorine in the air. Cochise explains the weapons were hidden near toxic waste to discourage scavengers. Suddenly, Matt sees his friend Mira wandering nearby. They get her to safety and she says she escaped from the camp after graduating. She

tells them they were trained to raise an alarm if they find any dissidents, but she says she threw her whistle away. Tom and Anne get suspicious and Tom ties her up.

In the ship, Dingaana and the Volm, Shaq, try to make sense of the beamer technology.

Ben takes Maggie on top of an old museum and tries to help her get used to her spikes. She can hear Pope and Sara arguing from inside. Maggie thinks the spikes feel like an invasion, but he assures her she'll love her new powers some day. He takes her hand and they jump off a three story building together and Maggie starts to see the perks of spikes.

Matt checks on Mira, who complains that her hands hurt where she's tied up. He's hesitant, but he unties her. She tells him it was hard after he left, but she's glad she stayed, because she learned a lot. She says they were wrong about everything. She reaches down to her shoe and pulls out her whistle, then blows it.

After their jump, Maggie jizzed. Ben confesses that at first he used to sneak out at night and jump off things or run as fast as he could. Eventually he realized he was freaking people out, so he toned it down. He says they can jump together, they just have to warn people. He tells her the alien DNA fused with her will heighten her emotions, and when she's happy she'll be ecstatic, but it works both ways. Their spikes both glow and she feels his sadness. He tells her she has to learn to control her power.

At the Volm weapons cache, they arming up when Matt drags Maya over. They see a beamer closing in, but Cochise doesn't have the bomb he needs to unearth the beamer ship yet.

Back in the rubble, Sara tries to confront Pope, but he tells her that she's an addict and a liar and he doesn't want to get used by her. She yells at him, saying she was fine before she met him and he's just afraid about what they might have. She shows him the pill bottle and says even though the label says Vicodin, it's just aspirin.

After the beamer attack at the Volm weapon's cache, Tom looks for his son. They see the team leaders from the youth camp coming in and open fire. Out in the woods, Matt chases after Mira, but another brainwashed youth steps out of the woods and shoots Matt in the neck with a tranquilizer. A group of kids surround them, but Weaver finds them and opens fire. He gets them to follow him and Cochise stuns them.

Tom and Anne take cover, but they're low on ammo. They head for better cover but Anne gets hit in the arm.

The Team Leader announces to Tom that they have Matt. He kicks over a vat of something and asks Tom to come with them. Tom runs out of ammo. Ken lights the spilled toxins on fire and tells Tom to come out. He intends to shoot. Anne runs out, distracting Ken. Tom jumps out of the flames and grabs a gun on the ground and shoots at Ken, mortally wounding him.

Tom checks on him, asking Ken how he could turn against his own people. "Progress is made when we embrace our Espheni brothers. I'm not a traitor, I'm a new patriot. I gave them my mother," Ken says, before dying.

Later, Anthony tells Pope that Sara left a few hours ago with a rifle and a couple days rations.

Ben lets Maggie show off her firing skills and she blasts and tumbles her way through a sharp shooter gymnastics course. "How do you like me now?" she teases. "I like you too much," he says. Their spikes both start glowing and she rushes to him and kisses him. Hal sees them, but just walks away.

Maggie apologizes, but says she feels drawn to Ben. But then she says she didn't before her spikes and she loves Hal, so Ben stops her from kissing him again, even though he wants her to.

Coming back from the weapons cache, Cochise is annoyed at the failed mission. Matt is upset over Mira. Tom tries to help him feel better, not by telling him to forget Mira, but to remember the feeling he had for her.

Back in camp, Hal sucker punches Ben and tells him to stay away from Maggie and that she's his. "I'm sorry, I didn't see your leash on her," Ben says.

Tom and his group return from their mission. He gives Dingaana Mira's whistle and tells him it can apparently summon beamers, but be careful with it. Tom can tell something is up between Hal and Ben, but they aren't dishing.

Back in their room, Tom teases Anne about saving him by essentially jumping out and yelling "hey wait!" He tells her he doesn't know what comes next for them, but no matter how much time they have left, he wants to spend it with her.

He gets down on one knee and proposes. She says yes.

The next day, Weaver leads the ceremony. Tom's vows include having her back in a firefight.

Anne wears black and a flower over her ear. Weaver pronounces them married when Shaq interrupts with important information about the beamer. He has taken apart the whistle, which is high tech on the inside and operates an ultrasonic frequency. He has linked it to the Volm communication device. When Tom asks what that means, Shaq demonstrates.

He blows the whistle. There's a rumbling and slowly the beamer lifts out of the rubble and hovers in the sky.

"We choose to go to the moon," Tom says.



## Drawing Straws

Season 4  
Episode Number: 40  
Season Episode: 10

Originally aired: Sunday August 24, 2014  
Writer: Josh Pate  
Director: Adam Kane  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Doug Jones (Cochise), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Scarlett Byrne (Lexi)  
Summary: Tom and the 2nd Mass learn to pilot an airship as part of a perilous mission to destroy the Espheni power core. Meanwhile, long-standing issues impact the group as the threat of death hangs over them.



Lexi dreams that Ben has come back to join her, but he only holds up his bloody hands and blames her for what she's done.

Meanwhile, Dingaan tries to make sense of the beamer's navigation system. Cochise suggests that because it's remote controlled normally, they have to find a way to break that connection.

Tom sees Matt is poking around the beamer and warns him to be careful, but Matt is embracing his teenage rebellious years.

Cochise takes everyone outside to watch beamers returning to the moon on

a homing beacon and explain an idea.

Meanwhile, inside the ship, Matt pushes a light under the stairs and a hatch pops open. Matt pulls on the tendons and the ship lurches. Everyone rushes back inside and before Tom can yell at Matt, they realize he's found a way to control the ship.

They're interrupted when they hear a Spanish broadcast in a loop.

Lexi meets with her Espheni brainwasher, who tries to help her embrace her powers of controlling gravity. He tells her to rip a tree out of the ground, saying she's setting it free. He guides her through it and Lexi blasts the tree to smithereens. She's knocked to her feet, unable to breathe, but he tells her she'll get stronger next time.

The scarred overlord that Tom torched watches them from a distance.

Meanwhile, back in Chinatown, Anthony reads a translation of the broadcast, saying the ghettos are being emptied in Andalusia and Italy. The aliens have a new more powerful weapon and people are being wiped out. "Go to ground, retreat, hide, survive. Or this is the end."

They picked it up on frequency 1776 and think it might be real. Maggie suggests they liberate a ghetto and get more fighters. But Tom is tired of small fights and wants to try to win the war by crippling the Espheni defenses. He volunteers to fly the mission.

Later, Anne wonders how Tom will possibly make it back. He says Cochise will be with him and thinks the ship will have enough stored battery power to make it after they drop the bomb. Anne thinks he needs to involve the people he's leading in the decision.

They're called to the beamer, where the ship has fried Cochise's Volm communicator with its defense mechanism. Cochise worries that it will lash out at anything Volm on the ship – including him – so he can't go on the mission.

He suggests that if they can get the beamer above the earth's atmosphere, the homing beacon will take the beamer to the moon. They just need to find the rest of the ship's controls.

They start walking around yanking on things, waiting to see what happens.

Ben tries to talk to Hal about Maggie, explaining that he never would have acted on anything if it weren't for the spikes.

The group gathers to determine the next move. Everyone begins to question Tom's insistence on flying the mission himself. Dingaon points out that he has 13 registered flight hours. Pope piles on about Tom being a glory hog. Anne supports Matt's idea of drawing names, but only of those who volunteer.

Later, Anne commends Tom for going along with the draw idea. He thinks it's a terrible idea and the person who's most qualified should go. Matt tells Tom he wants to put his name in, but Tom says no without discussion.

Lexi's brainwasher teleconferences with his lava rock, telling the other overlord that he has Lexi under control and she thinks her powers are for peace. Lexi makes her own lava rock intercom and joins in the call on the shadow plane, listening as they discuss their scheme for her. The overlord tells her brainwasher that she's becoming too risky and he should kill her. The brainwasher agrees.

Maggie checks on Hal and tells him the connection to Ben is driven by the spikes and is just physical. He tells her it's a convenient excuse for a lack of self control. When she tries to insist she doesn't want to be with Ben, he says they really hurt him.

Weaver catches Pope taking a name out of the draw and accuses him of being a coward. Pope thinks the moon adventure is a suicide mission. He keeps jawing until he mentions the skitterization and Pope's daughter, succeeding in provoking a fist fight. Weaver is wailing on Pope and about to bash him with a rock when Pope shouts that he didn't take his name out of the draw – he took Weaver's and Mason's.

Pope tells Weaver the people need him and Mason but nobody needs him. He knows it's a one way trip and wants to be the martyr and throw the hail Mary for the planet. Pope essentially says he doesn't have anything to live for and Weaver tells him Sara might come back.

Weaver apologizes.

Later that night, everyone gathers around as Tom pulls names out of the skitter skull. It looks like everyone put their name in. He reaches in and pulls out Ben.

He puts his hand in to draw the second but draws from his own hand and pulls his own name.

In private, Anne asks Tom point blank if he fixed the draw. He admits it. Anne tells him this is the exact type of hubris that would shake people's faith in him. Tom can't let Ben go alone and tells her he just has this sense that he's supposed to go.

The next morning, Lexi meets with her brainwasher again. When she closes her eyes, he puts his hand around her throat, but she turns her powers on him. She knows she's not the bringer of peace, she's the bringer of war. She explodes him into Espheni dust.

Tom checks in with Hal and brings up Ben and Maggie. He tells Hal that Ben wants to see him before he goes.

Later in bed, Anne confesses she's worried about the mission. Tom promises he'll do everything he can to come back to her. Anne gives him a "second day anniversary present," a pocket book of quotations from Epiktotis, a Stoic Greek philosopher.

Maggie visits Ben on the ship to say good-bye. She says she'll miss him and hugs him. Their spikes light up and they start kissing. Maggie starts to break it off but they start up again. They're interrupted by Hal saying he came to accept Ben's apology. Hal walks off. Ben tries to go after him, but Hal won't listen.

Tom reviews things with Dingaon and hugs Weaver good-bye. Ben hopes to see Hal. Tom tells Matt he doesn't have to be so tough all the time. Tom thanks Anne for understanding him.

Ben goes on the ship and is surprised to see Hal. Hal tells Ben he forgives him. Ben admits he does have feelings for Maggie, but for her it's just about the spikes. They both know it's up to Maggie anyway. "Who knows, in the next couple of years, Matt will probably end up marrying her anyway," Hal says.



They're hugging when Tom joins them. They're about to blast off when Dingaam races over, announcing that he hears something coming.

They see a half dozen beamers flying overhead and duck for cover. But something explodes the beamers out of the sky and they crash down in pieces around them.

They wonder what happened.

Then Lexi walks into camp and up to Tom. "Hello, father," she says.



## Space Oddity

Season 4

Episode Number: 41

Season Episode: 11

Originally aired: Sunday August 31, 2014  
Writer: M. Raven Metzner  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Summary: A mission to destroy the Espheni power core turns complicated when Lexi returns. Elsewhere, Lexi takes drastic measures when an airship malfunctions, and the 2nd Mass fears an Espheni attack.



The camp converges on Lexi, with guns drawn. Pope is ready to waste her, but Tom wants to hear what she has to say.

Lexi came to apologize. Anne notices Lexi's eyes are back to normal. She says she understands now that the Espheni are the enemy. She wants to act as their weapon, but Tom doesn't see how they can possibly trust her again.

Meanwhile, Pope runs to get a rifle. Weaver tries to stop him, but Pope knocks him out and runs to take the shot.

Lexi sees it coming in slow motion and is able to grab it out of the air and crush it. Lexi says they have no reason to be

afraid, but Tom says they have no reason not to hate her. Anne wants a chance to see if Lexi is telling the truth, but Tom tells Anne to keep Lexi away from him.

Tom storms off to confront Pope, who says he can't stand the idea of burying more people. Tom has some sympathy for the fact that Pope is affected because he's finally caring about people other than himself, but warns him that he crossed a line going after Lexi and Tom won't let it happen again.

Tom goes to talk to his sons, who are just as distrustful of Lexi. Tom simply says the moon launch is back on.

Inside the beamer, Tom loads the bomb. Cochise is worried and wants Tom to wait until he hears from his father, who might be able to help take out the power core. But he's not sure if his father will respond at all – Cochise confesses that he disobeyed his father to stay on earth and help fight, so he and his men are the only Volm in the area.

Anne talks to Lexi as Weaver stands guard. Anne is worried that Lexi is under Espheni control, but Lexi explains she was never under their control, she was just confused. Anne rants again about not being able to trust her. Lexi tells Anne she's their best chance of destroying the power core. She says she can control the beamer's systems.

She tries to convince Anne that she can fly the beamer, but Anne tells her she can't stay. Weaver interrupts, telling Anne she's making a huge mistake.

Weaver and Anne tell Tom about Lexi's offer to go on the mission instead of Ben. Weaver goes all history professor on Tom and reminds him about the allies having to team with Stalin to defeat Hitler.

Tom reluctantly agrees. Everybody takes their verbal shots at Lexi as she and Tom head toward the beamer. Anne tells them both to come back in one piece.

Before Tom gets on the ship, Hal gives him an Espheni poison to use on Lexi just in case.

Everyone watches as the ship takes flight.

Tom struggles to breathe as the ship clears the atmosphere, but is OK once they're above it. Lexi engages the homing beacon as they head to the moon.

Tom notices the ship is getting colder. Lexi checks and finds a breach in the hull is draining the life support and energy. She suggests they lower life support to a minimum or they won't have power for the return trip. In order to keep them alive the rest of the way there, she suggests an Espheni cocoon.

Tom is reluctant, but goes along because it's the only option. Lexi wraps him up, telling him to just breathe deeply. He gets nervous, remembering that's what she said to Lourdes right before she killed her. But before he can panic too much, she puts him to sleep.

The next thing Tom knows, Anne and Hal are digging him out of the cocoon. He's back on earth and the mission is over.

They take him outside and show him a massive crater on the moon, caused by an explosion a day after he left. Hal explains that the scorched overlord attacked but he ran when the power supply was destroyed.

Anne takes him to see Lexi, who is recovering. Her platinum hair is now brown, like her mother. She tells him the life support drain on the battery was worse than she thought so she didn't wake him up. The power supply flooded the ship with radiation, which seems to have washed Lexi's Espheni DNA from her system. She can't hear them anymore.

Lexi promises to spend her life making up for what she did to Lourdes, but Anne assures her she's one of them now.

Later, Weaver tells Tom that all the ghetto walls have fallen and the scorched overlord has fallen back. They think they might have a fair fight for the first time.

At night around a campfire, Maggie comes to thank Lexi. Tom notices Pope is gone. Anne says Pope left after the beamer launch and no one has seen him since.

Tom hears cheers and Anthony reports that Dinga'an's attack on the scorched overlord was successful. Tom starts to get angry that the attack was authorized without him, but Weaver says Hal authorized it and it was a success.

Anne takes Tom back to their room and starts kissing him, but Tom can't shake the feeling something isn't right. He's bothered that Weaver blew him off, and that they already have word of Dinga'an's attack 30 miles away. He thinks it's too perfect.

Anne tells him that there are no fights to be fought and Lexi's dream of peace is finally coming true. Tom tells her he doesn't feel like he's there. Tom wants to talk to Lexi and Anne says she'll go find Khadar who, Tom points out, is dead – but Lexi doesn't know that.

Tom steps outside of his room and into an empty camp full of rubble. He goes looking for Lexi, but finds Weaver. He tells Tom that Lexi is afraid of what Tom will think when he wakes up. Weaver tells him to accept her. Tom rushes her and stumbles into the next vision of his sons telling him to cut Lexi some slack, like he did when the Espheni messed with each of them – Ben with his spikes, Hal with the eye bug, Matt with the brainwashing school. "Wehre were you when she needed you?" Hal says, and swings at him.

Tom wakes up by a fire with his hands bound. He sees Lourdes, who tells him Lexi is terrified he won't forgive her. Tom talks into the night, telling her she's hiding behind everyone.

Finally, she appears and Tom tells her he understands she's scared. She tells him she's not doing it on purpose, but she put herself in the cocoon with him and they're dreaming together. He tells her he regrets not being able to forgive her, but they have their remorse in common and it makes them human. They wake up.

Lexi shows Tom their final approach to the moon and promises that talk can be the first of many father daughter talks.

Back in the hull, the bomb slowly leaks.

## Shoot the Moon

Season 4

Episode Number: 42

Season Episode: 12

Originally aired: Sunday August 31, 2014  
Writer: David Eick  
Director: Greg Beeman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Seychelle Gabriel (Lourdes), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Connor Jes-sup (Ben Mason), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver)  
Guest Stars: Doug Jones (Cochise), Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Mira Sorvino (Sara)  
Summary: Tom and Lexi must triumph over Tom's mortal enemy as they desperately try to destroy the all-powerful Espheni power core. Elsewhere, the 2nd Mass faces a terrifying new Espheni bomb.



As Tom and Lexi approach the moon, the rest of the 2nd Mass waits. Out in the woods, Dingaen sees a man in a pit being slowly attacked by a pod that's turning him into a skitter. There's a whole field of them full of people screaming.

In the camp, they start hearing the baying of dogs.

Weaver kills time showing Matt how to throw a knife. Matt mentions the poison that Hal gave Tom on the ship.

Hal and Maggie realize Anthony and Dingaen's recon teams are overdue. Just then, Dingaen stumbles back into camp alone. The rest of his patrol is all gone.

On the ship, autopilot latches on to the homing beacon. Tom goes to check on the bomb and finds that it was destroyed when they shut off life support. He suggests Lexi use her powers, but she says she can't without gravity.

Lexi explains the Espheni are mining the moon and converting it to wireless energy and beaming it to earth. Tom remembers the scorched overlord telling him that something was coming that they couldn't comprehend.

Just then the ship starts to shimmy and shake, they're being pulled into an Espheni ship. Once they dock, Tom draws his gun and boards the ship.

Dingaen reports seeing his men all on the ground with things pulsating on their chests as they transformed. Weaver interrupts the gloomy moment telling everyone to take up their posts.

A beamer flies overhead and Pope runs to attack. But the beamer drops a pod onto the ground that opens and releases a fog that traps a woman in place as tentacles come for her. Hal and Maggie run as it comes for them.

Maggie gets away but Hal and Ben get trapped, their feet stuck in the fog like it's cement.

Weaver takes Matt into a warehouse and they start barricading the windows to keep the fog out, but it seeps in through the vents.

The first woman screams helplessly as the tentacle attacks her and slowly changes her.

On the Espheni ship, Tom sees Mira has been harnessed and is talking for the scorched overlord. He attacks Lexi with his powers.

Back in the camp, Pope and Dingaen try to climb to safety, but fall into the fog and are trapped. Anne continues to climb out of its grasp.

In the warehouse, Weaver urges Matt to take out his knife and he stakes an approaching tentacle.

On the ship, the scorched overlord is choking Lexi through her necklace of tree circles.

Maggie leans down to grab Ben and is able to get him through their go-go gadget spikes.

On the ship, Mira takes a smoldering ember and approaches Lexi as Tom begs the overlord not to hurt her because of him.

In the fog, Dingaan blames Pope for running directly into the thing he warned him to stay away from, as is his habit. They hear the tentacles approaching but can't see them in the fog. Suddenly one grabs Dingaan.

Anne grabs a flare and discovers the flame repels the fog.

On the ship, Lexi tells the overlord that she delivered Tom just like she promised she would.

In the warehouse, Weaver keeps Matt's spirits up by getting him to chant "the fight isn't over til it's over."

Anne grabs a flame thrower and makes her way through the fog.

Maggie and Ben urge Hal to hang tight as they rig a way to swing toward him. Pope sees Dingaan dragged by back him, screaming at him to get the tentacle off him. Pope grabs the tentacle by him and bites through it, killing it.

The scorched overlord takes the ember and rakes it across Lexi's face, burning her like Tom burned him, even as she continues to insist that she's Espheni. But Tom comes up behind him and stabs him with the poison syringe.

With the overlord down, Tom snatches the necklace of Lexi's neck and gets back to the mission, asking Lexi if she can steer the ship on a collision course to the power core. She sends him back to the beamer to disengage it from the ship, promising to join him.

Back on earth, Cochise radios his father, finally reaching him.

Anne busts into the warehouse with the flame thrower, rescuing Weaver and Matt.

Hal and Maggie throw a cord around Hal and scoop him up out of the fog.

With Matt and Weaver freed, they're about to leave the warehouse when a tentacle comes out of nowhere and latches on to Weaver's chest. Anne tries to burn it, but her flame thrower is out of juice.

Weaver is able to save himself by slamming the tentacle's cord shut in the window.

In space, Lexi tells Tom the overlord destroyed the autopilot so she's going to fly the ship herself. He tries to convince her to come with him, but she shares a vision with him and tells him she's programmed the beamer to fly home and it has just enough life support. She hugs him good-bye.

The beamer disengages from the Espheni ship, which Lexi flies toward the power sources on the moon. Tom sees dozens of beamers approaching on the radar.

Out the fog, Pope thinks he's a goner when someone shoots a tentacle out of the fog. It's Sarah. She shoots the tentacle off Dingaan and takes out another coming for Pope.

In the warehouse, the tentacle is still stuck to Weaver's chest, but it's slowed down by being pinched in the window.

Ben, Hal and Maggie sit on top of a bus out of the reach of the tentacles – at least until they start to climb up the sides of the bus.

As beamers converge on Tom's ship, suddenly Cochise's father appears and shoots them out of the sky.

Lexi steers her ship directly into the power core, causing a massive explosion on the moon, which also sends Tom's ship hurtling through space. He struggles but cannot stop its spinning.

In the light of day, in the warehouse, Anne wakes up and sees the fog is completely gone. Weaver is OK and the tentacle is a charred husk.

Everyone regroups out in the camp. They see the giant crater on the moon and wait for Tom's return.

Pope takes Sarah's hand.

Spinning peacefully in space, Tom finds an old photo of his family in the book Anne gave him.

Cochise finds Anne and tells everyone they can't find Tom's ship. Anne rallies, telling everyone that Tom always finds his way home and they have to finish what Tom started and end the war. Anthony and his scout party return. Hal rallies everyone to go attack the sitting duck Espheni.

Tom wakes up in his old bedroom, with sounds from the war playing everywhere. A new alien stands in the doorway. "Oh my god, I had no idea," he says. "You're beautiful."

# **Season Five**





## Find Your Warrior

Season 5  
Episode Number: 43  
Season Episode: 1

Originally aired: Sunday June 28, 2015  
Writer: David Eick  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), Megan Danso (Deni), John DeSantis (Shaq), Mira Sorvino (Sara), Rob Hayter (Scotty), Cody Davis (Toughie), John H. Mayer (Waschak-Cha'ab), Geoff Redknap (Puppeteer)  
Summary: Tom's life is in peril as his beamer drifts into space following a successful yet tragic mission to destroy the Espheni power core. Also: Anne reluctantly takes on a leadership role; and a new plan for winning the war is shared.



Tom has a conversation with the Great Enemy that he had woken up to after the moon mission, though he sees her as his wife Rebecca Mason, showed as a memory of a conversation they had once about her breast cancer, Rebecca speaks in words that apply just as well to the war on Earth, saying how she wants to "hit it with both barrels, and maybe this monster goes into remission, I want to eradicate this."

Continuing with the double meanings, she warns Tom, "You never know where a rogue cell might be hiding," and then counsels him, "You have to get more than mad. You must tap into your primal rage, even if it costs you."

"Find your warrior," she sums it up, before volumes of water come splashing through the Boston bedroom's windows, submerging Tom, who later, mysteriously, resurfaces in the water on Earth, and then makes tracks for the 2nd Mass, which conveniently turns out to be a two-day walk.

Back at camp, Weaver nudges a mournful Anne to speak to the troops, so she tells everyone that while Tom and Lexi may be gone, the good news is that the Espheni power core is down. After that setback, their foe bugged out in a mass exodus. As she speaks, we see Tom making his way back, fending off a winged Black Hornet along the way, but he's not satisfied with leaving it wounded, but seeing to it that it's dead, "find your warrior".

Once reunited with the 2nd Mass, Tom shares some of his "memory" with Anne and his sons. Anne posits that he was hallucinating aboard the cold beamer, while Ben suggests the ship used autopilot to get him back to Earth safely. Whatever the case, Tom gets a clean bill of health before addressing the 2nd Mass. There, he asserts that for the many sacrifices they each have made to mean anything, they need to get mad, with rage, not anger. "It's time for overkill," he trumpets.

To track down and neutralize some nearby tech, three groups are formed. Alpha, led by Hal, has an easy time dispatching with some wild skitters and a beamer that crashed into a barn.

Bravo company runs into some mechs that have no fight left in them. The Charlie group, led by Tom, is lured into a trap, though, and surrounded by skitters. When one of the skitterskills Scotty, Tom uses the Scott's corpse to bait the skitters in the direction of a bomb, but the remote doesn't work. Luckily, Bravo team rides to the rescue, and Sara shoots the bomb, exploding the trees and the alien ship they were holding.

On the walk back from the mission, Maggie asks Hal about how he made sure Ben was assigned to a different group; Hal romantically declares, "I'm not letting you go," as he swoops her up in his arms. After some more flowery words, he makes clear: "I'm asking you to hurt Ben... to break his heart to be with me." But as much as Maggie loves Hal in return, she reiterates, "These feelings for Ben, I can't control them, and neither can you." Meaning: the triangle continues.

After Matt, whom Tom had encouraged to be a part of Charlie group, reveals that he was unnerved by his father's tactics involving Scotty's dead body, Tom and Anne touch on his new "warrior" mentality. With a nod to how Tom made her take off the pendant that reminded her of lost Lexi, lest she get lost in depression, Anne says, "I don't want to get lost in rage either. Having determines that an Overlord must be situated nearby, Tom insists that the nearby Woodrow Wilson High School must be the hiding spot, seeing as he saw a conspicuous bust of Wilson during his "memory" with Rebecca. At the school, they take out a gymnasium full of skitters, but when Anthony and Denny split off to scope out the pool, some skitters grab Denny and rip her in half, right in front of a distraught Anthony.

Tom finds the Overlord in a storage room, and talks to him using Ben. The Overload says he is "not afraid," contending that he has leverage in his connection to Ben, but Tom argues that he could shoot the big guy right there and all his son will get is "a headache." And Tom does just that, shooting the leader in the head, and then a few times more for good measure.

At a funeral pyre for Denny, Tom gets stung on the back of his neck. And when he looks at the swatted bug, he sees that it's unusual.

## Hunger Pains

Season 5

Episode Number: 44

Season Episode: 2

Originally aired: Sunday July 5, 2015  
Writer: Marc Dube  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Recurring Role: Mira Sorvino (Sara)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), Taylor Russell (Evelyn), Julia Sarah Stone (Caitlin), Al Dales (Russell)  
Summary: An unexpected skitter attack leaves the 2nd Mass without food, triggering a desperate mission to find supplies. Meanwhile, Maggie makes false promises to protect the 2nd Mass, and it's discovered the Espheni have created hybrid being that's part Espheni, part skitter, part hornet and part human.



A horde of Skitters descending on the 2nd Mass, without the guidance of a local Overlord they are slightly less formidable and calculating, acting more like rabid creatures than warriors, while heading to their target many of them are turning on one another as well, coming wave after wave. During the first wave of Skitter attacks some of them get behind the 2nd Mass' barricade and inexplicably their entire food supply gets blown up.

Even though they now barely have any food left and a whole camp full of people

to feed the Skitters maintain their attacks on the camp for well over a week, to the point where things are starting to look pretty bleak as people are starting to lose energy and morale at a rapid pace. Ben manages to find some tins of food that survived the blast and Weaver discovers they were made in a factory located not far from where they are holed up so they hatch a plan for Pope, Sarah, Ben and Maggie to head on out and try to scavenge as much food as they can.

Anthony has started to lose his grip a little after what he witnessed the Skitters do to his Denny and Tom is trying to get him to keep that rage and focus it so it can be used as a weapon instead of a burden. He seemingly takes this advice to heart, and Anthony and a few other fighters manage to take a Skitter alive and proceed to torture it out of some form of misguided justice. Tom sees exactly what his men are doing and just stands back forcing Weaver to come in and become the voice of reason, shooting the Skitter.

Before heading out to the factory, Pope, tries to come up with a solution. Pope decides since they have a whole mountain of dead Skitters, why not cook one up. While cooking, Russell decides that he is hungry enough and gives it a go, however it affects him highly, causing him to spit blood and cause his jaw to fall off.

As Anne is trying to investigate the bug that bit Tom, a task which is admittedly made harder by the fact she has no microscope or anything to magnify it. Anne finally has a chance to take a close look at what it could be after Matt makes her a microscope. She notices it has skitter legs,

Espheni arms, Black Hornet wings and which shocked Anne, human eyes. When Tom goes to investigate, he sees the human eye before it moves and stares at Tom. The bug flies away, Tom and Anne follow it to where a swarm of alien bugs join together, and a herd of skitters and Black Hornets are in a field.

## Hatchlings

Season 5  
Episode Number: 45  
Season Episode: 3

Originally aired: Sunday July 12, 2015  
Writer: Jonathan Glassner  
Director: Robert Lieberman  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Recurring Role: Mira Sorvino (Sara)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Taylor Russell (Evelyn), Julia Sarah Stone (Caitlin)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass makes a discovery about the source for a seemingly endless supply of enemy forces. Elsewhere, Tom's leadership spreads to remaining human militias; Hal helps Maggie on a personal mission; and Tom must make an agonizing choice.



The creatures are dining on Croomia and the plan is for the drone to "crop dust" the valley with home-made white phosphorus. The stuff works beautifully and the creatures all drop dead. The news of their success is shared with other militia groups. Tom is upset to learn that the other resistant groups are being called Mason's militia.

Maggie explains to Caitlyn that they cannot help her brother. As she and the girl talk, the creature communicates with Maggie via the spikes and she says

"Catie." Caitlyn has always believed that her brother is still in the skitter hybrid he has become and this proves it. Brian tells his big sister, through Maggie, that he is afraid he will hurt her.

Tom Mason and Weaver follow a trail of newly arriving skitters and it looks like they are being manufactured on a massive scale. Mason suspects that the creatures were made by another Overlord. The things are beginning to overrun everything and Tom is frustrated. He learns that there is not enough fertilizer left to make any more W.P. and that the skitters are being generated quicker than they can kill them.

Brian escapes with Caitlyn, he extends a claw and knocks out Anthony who was acting as a guard, and Maggie goes to save the girl. Mason sends Hal to go with her. As Anthony is being treated, he reveals that he has real issues with the skitter hybrid whom he calls a "G\*\*dam Espheni." Weaver says they need to follow the flow of skitters to see where they are being made.

Pope and Sara go to check the source by following the stream and Tom discovers that the creature in his dreams, or visions, is an extinct species called the Dorniya. Mason knows that the aliens are not extinct at all, he has seen them. Maggie and Hal find Brian and Caitlyn along with an Overlord. The mutant is being scolded and has been told to kill his sister.

Maggie is "taken over" by the Overlord via the spikes and approaches the trio in the woods. The Overlord orders Brian to kill Maggie and Hal. Caitlyn jumps in front of the couple and the "skitterling" shoots his sister instead. The Overlord is stabbed by Hal and Brian, upset that he hurt Catie, shoots himself. The girl dies and Maggie tells Hal that the two should be buried together. The Overlord is taken back for questioning.

Sara and Pope share backstories while looking for the "skitter river" and they learn a bit more about one another and their previous life. Pope was a father and Sara was not allowed to adopt because of her then drug habit. Pope tells her that after the war she could still have kids the old fashioned way and that she would make beautiful babies.

Matt is by Evelyn's bed when she wakes up and the two talk. The Overlord is brought into camp and Mason uses Ben to question the creature who tells him that no amount of pain will make it talk. The Overlord says that Ben will not be able to withstand the torture as well as it can.

Pope and Sara are still heading to the "river" when she spots an "artichoke" bomb. Pope tells her it is okay as they were all "burnt to a crisp." Jumping off the log in front of the thing, she lands in a patch of "Espheni fog crap." Pope tells her the stuff is like cement but he tries to pull her out. Sara is stuck firmly and she says the fog is like "superglue." Pope says they need fire to burn her out. She talks him into going to get a flamethrower and he promises her that she will not "die out here."

Ben goes to find Maggie and asks her to join her spikes, he gave her some of his, as he believes that they can force information from the Overlord while in his brain. Hal is right and they learn that the Overlord is making the new bioweapons and where they are being manufactured. Once they learn where the skitters are being made the militia start out to bomb the facility. Tom wants the Overlord left alive so they can learn more.

Pope runs up and tells them about Sara. He says they need to save her first, Tom disagrees and they leave him behind. The group arrive to find a steady stream of skitters and hornets coming out of a building and Tom, Anthony and Hal go around the back to blow it up.

Weaver and the others stay out front and wait for the explosion before opening fire on the remaining creatures. Anthony freezes and it causes a delay. The skitter manufacturing plant is destroyed and the group head off to help Pope save Sara.

Pope gets back to Sara with the flamethrower only to find her covered in some sort of flying insects. She appears to be unconscious and he uses the weapon to kill off the bugs. Once they are cleared, he can see that her legs have been stripped of flesh and when she wakes up, Sara says that she cannot feel her legs. She dies in his arms.

Back at the camp, Anthony relieves the guard that Weaver put on the Overlord. The creature opens up its left hand revealing a red glowing object. Anthony tells the thing to put it down and when the Overlord ignores his order, He shoots it to death. The object melts away after the creature dies. Weaver comes in and takes Anthony's weapon from him. He is then taken out of the militia as a soldier.

Mason, Hal and the rest arrive to find Pope cradling Sara. He looks at Tom and with his voice full of emotion says, "You're too late, Mason." Later, back in the camp, Mason is lost in thought and Weaver has to work to get his attention. Pope is on the other side of the fire and glaring at Tom. The group rest before heading to Washington D.C.

## Pope Breaks Bad

Season 5  
Episode Number: 46  
Season Episode: 4

Originally aired: Sunday July 19, 2015  
Writer: Jack Kenny  
Director: Peter Leto  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), John DeSantis (Shaq), Chris McNally (Ryan), Nico Amoroso (2nd Mass Member), John H. Mayer (Waschak-Cha'ab)  
Summary: A mission to procure vehicles and fuel goes awry. Cochise shares troubling news with Anne that will test both her medical and leadership skills. Anthony's mental stability and his loyalties are brought into question. Meanwhile, a desperate Pope takes things into his own hands.



John is leaning over a shrine that he has erected. It is setting at the spot where Sara died and the monument has her name scratched on the base. Tom shows up and stands back from the area. He tells Pope that he could have had help setting up the statue and that others wanted to say goodbye to Sara. Mason says a number of things meant to comfort John who does not reply. He looks away from Mason with a look of rage.

Back at camp John angrily berates Mason for his decision to leave Sara until after the mission. He breaks a shovel in half and throws the pieces in a burning barrel. "Say goodbye to this," he says and then states that Sara meant no more to Tom than the broken tool.

Cochise, reveals to Mason, Weaver and the rest that his "life span has concluded." The Volm has called his father to share a "silence," which is their custom. Anne Glass is horrified, as is Weaver. They find out that his version of a kidney, he has only one, is giving out and Anne explains about organ transplants in an effort to save the alien.

Tom asks Ryan to join his group who head to a police station to recon for gasoline and weapons. Weaver has explained that the 2nd Mass will not go very far without extra fuel or vehicles, hence the trip. The youngster grabs his weapon and they all head out.

John begins working to recruit a faction of the militia to join his "Hate Mason" crusade. Anthony complains to John about having his weapon taken away and Pope gives him a pistol. As John continues to connect with others who feel that Tom Mason has killed too many people in his role as leader, the subplot of the Volm and his dilemma continues.

Cochise meets with his father for their shared silence and he tells him of the transplant operation suggested by Glass. After an initial argument, the general agrees to the procedure and insists that Anne do it as the Volm do not have doctors.

Mason, Weaver, Matt and Dingaan Botha arrive at the police station and find a group of vehicles that appear to be in operating order. Matt finds radios and cans of mace. Weaver finds

an immaculate muscle car and is overjoyed. They also find a short wave radio and make contact with an English woman outside Bolivia. Ryan discovers the same flesh eating bugs that killed Sara and is consumed in seconds.

Tom is chased by the flying insects and just as it looks like he will be joining Sara and Ryan, he remembers that they have human eyes. He sprays the mace disabling the creatures and escapes.

Anne performs the surgery and Cochise reacts well to the transplant, his father is not so fortunate and the general dies after donating one of his "kidneys". She heads out to get a car battery from a vehicle to restart the general's heart and she chooses Weaver's muscle car battery. The men have returned from their weapons and petrol run.

As she collects jumper cables, and Weaver calls for wrenches to remove the battery, Pope very loudly questions Tom about why Ryan is not there. He then begins a tirade against Mason for killing yet another member of the 2nd Mass. Anne removes the battery and heads back to revive Cochise's father. Pope continues his attack on Mason and then zeroes in on Tom's deceased daughter Lexi. Mason finally confronts the man. Cocking his pistol, he shoves the weapon in John's hand, with the barrel placed on his own forehead and tells the Pope to shoot him.

He refuses and walks away. Tom banishes John from the 2nd Mass and tells him not to return, he is no longer part of the battle or the war. Pope leaves but the word is that this is far from over.

The general cannot be revived and Anne offers to undergo the "silence" that Cochise never had with his father. He agrees and as the two undertake the ceremony, Cochise sees the general and Anne sees Lexi, each interact with their "vision." This takes place in complete silence and is an emotional experience for both Glass and Cochise. Once it ends, Anne whispers, "I'll be damned." She and the Volm then talk of grief and he states that he feels relieved of a burden he did not know he carried.

Anthony approaches Anne and asks to speak privately with her. He leads her into a room where Pope is waiting. He has shaved off his long hair and it is clear he intends to kill her to punish Tom. Glass talks him out of it and she pushes her way past a disappointed Anthony to warn Mason that Pope has become dangerous.

Mason has another vision, Rebecca telling him that things are coming to a head with the alien threat and Tom angrily asks to speak to the Dornia directly. He says he does not need his dead wife to talk to them any longer. As he struggles to learn what they want, Rebecca asks where Hal is. This warns Tom that his son has been taken by Pope.

Mason goes to save his son and Weaver tells him to be careful. The captain tells him that the war has changed people, Tom says he knows that Pope has changed. "I was talking about you," says Weaver. John Pope takes the bag off of Hal's head and tells Mason's son that he will not kill him. Instead, he says, Mason will die when he comes to rescue his son.



## Non-Essential Personnel

Season 5

Episode Number: 47

Season Episode: 5

Originally aired: Sunday July 26, 2015  
Writer: Jim Barnes  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Michael Smith (Rob), Terry Lewis (Drew), Michelle Sabat (Beth), Noel Johansen (Ken), Nico Amoroso (Pope Crew Member), Chad Riley (ND Survivor #1)  
Summary: The 2nd Mass members leave Chinatown and head to what they anticipate will be the final Espheni battle. On their journey, they happen upon an unhinged gunman, who takes Weaver hostage. Meanwhile, Tom tries to rescue Hal.



A group of people trapped in a house by skitters. Four of them decide to escape and once outside they are cornered by two skitters. A police Bronco roars up and Pope, along with Anthony, gets out and shoots the skitters down. Afterward, Anthony rescues the group still in the house. When they get back to Pope, the new leader learns that his "right hand man" has designated four of the group as "non essential personnel" and they are told to leave. One of the survivors, Isabella says she is a nurse and can be of

use to Pope and his crew. John agrees to let her stay but the other three must leave. She tries to bargain for them to remain but loses.

Meanwhile, Tom Mason is following clues that Pope relays via radio transmitter. Weaver and the rest of the 2nd Mass are ambushed by what appears to be one gunman who has the drop on the convoy. He demands a truck and half their ammunition or he will start blowing up vehicles every 30 seconds.

Weaver goes into talk and once inside he gets shot. Anne comes up to make sure he is alright and Weaver tells her to play along with the lone gunman as he has a wife and two kids he is trying to protect.

Isabella, after convincing Pope that he can use her, gets her first tasking. She must patch up Hal after Pope cuts him so Tom can hear him scream. Tom Mason tells Pope, "I will kill you."

Back at the ambush, Weaver tries to get into the gunman's head, but this man is off with the fairies and not to be reasoned with. Anne, reluctantly, orders half the ammo to be placed by the door. She tells the rest of the troops that they will double back later and get Weaver.

Isabella patches Hal Mason up and he tells her that it will not take Pope long to realize that she is not really a nurse. He also tells Isabella that he knows why she fought to keep her friends with Pope's crew, "you care", he says and tells her that it will not take long for his captor to figure that out as well.

A giant hornet attacks the camp and one of the new recruits, Ken is injured. Isabella begins to treat the man when Pope asks if he can still fight. "I don't know" she starts to reply and before she can finish her sentence Pope shoots the man dead.

Mason continues his frustratingly slow journey to get Hal back and has another vision from the Dornia. Appearing as Rebecca once more, the creature tells Tom that if he dies the war and Earth will be lost. Mason refuses to stop going after Hal as he will not let his son die for the "greater good." "I love you," says the Dornia Rebecca, "you're not her," replies Tom as he leaves to rescue his son.

Weaver tries to overpower the ambusher and loses. Later, while the gunman is in another room talking to his family, Weaver gets his hands loose. He asks for water and when the man gives him a drink Weaver grabs the pistol off the other man's belt. Both men stand facing each other with weapons at the ready when Maggie and Ben enters through the window in.

After a short tense stand off, Weaver talks the man down and tells him they can help. He reveals that he and Anne lost kids, as he surmised the gunman has, and he explains that they are there for him as they, the 2nd Mass, were for Weaver when he was found. His speech calms the distraught father and he shows Weaver what was in the other room. His family are all dead and in body bags. Weaver gets the mans name, being Marty, and convinces him to join the 2nd Mass.

Hal gives a very similar speech to Isabella, about "being there" and this was why she decided to release Tom's son rather than just escape.

Back at the camp, Tom shoots Pope in the face as Hal and Isabella start to drive away. As Tom waits for another shot at John, the giant hornet that attacked the camp earlier comes back and grabs Mason; lifting him up and flying away. Hal and Isabella get away and later a wounded Pope, the shot grazed his cheek, questions Anthony about where Hal is.

# Respite

Season 5  
Episode Number: 48  
Season Episode: 6

Originally aired: Sunday August 2, 2015  
Writer: Ayanna A. Floyd  
Director: Jonathan Frakes  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Chelah Horsdal (Alicia), Brendan Meyer (Kyle), Timothy Webber (Willie McComb), Dakota Guppy (Jessica), Dean Petriw (Zach)  
Summary: An injured Tom takes refuge with a family and learns about life without war in the process. Meanwhile, Hal and Isabella's relationship blooms as they search for Tom; the 2nd Mass locates an Espheni device; and Maggie makes a decision, with consequences.



Tom Mason wakes up in a bed, with a woman he thinks at first is Rebecca treating the wounds on his face. He has been reacts badly to her presence and the woman leaves the room locking the door behind her. Mason finds a weapon and a older man enters with a rifle. After a brief standoff explanations are given from both sides.

The leader of the 2nd Mass is in a part of North Carolina that has not been touched by the war. The man, his daughter and her three children are staying out

of the fight. Mason gets a break from the war, and it is overwhelming; he cries at dinner and tells the family that he is fine when asked.

The woman is Alicia lost her husband to another war and she wants to protect her family. Her oldest son, Kyle, strains boundaries and wants to know what is really going on. When he learns about the conflict from Tom the 15 year-old wants to join the effort.

Back at the 2nd Mass, Weaver is having a hard time accepting the fawning gratitude of Marty, the grief-stricken and slightly mad father from last week's episode, who shot Daniel. As they bivouac for the night, Marty is so intrusive that he is making Weaver uncomfortable; arranging his backpack and tent, and finally Weaver asks Marty to find him a bottle of whiskey.

They have followed the signal to a distillery and Weaver has split the 2nd Mass into separate groups to search for the source; the transmitter. Maggie asks Anne to take out her spikes, that Ben gave her, and Anne says no. Glass tells her that later they can talk about removing them, but now she needs her "super soldier."

Cochise tells Maggie that he will take them out. Later, he attempts to remove the three spikes and on the last one, problems arise. The final spike attempts to dig in further and starts cutting of Maggie's spinal cord. Cochise gets Anne who steps in to finish the procedure. The spikes are successfully removed and Ben is upset that Maggie had them taken out.

"I gave you part of me," Ben says, "and you threw them into the trash." Ben also tells Maggie that he loves her. Meanwhile Tom continues to heal and bond with the little family who saved

him from the giant hornet. Hal and Jessica are also bonding as they search for Tom. On the way they find the giant hornet, it is wounded but still alive. Hal empties his gun's clip into the creature and Jessica tells him that it is dead.

At the hornet's body, Isabella notices wheeled tracks that lead away and they follow the trail. Earlier, Isabella revealed that her father was a diplomat who taught her people were essentially good inside, she tells Hal that she learned differently. These two could turn into an item, they certainly relate well, and use humor in their conversation. Hal mentions Isabella helping him to "escape" and she replies "you mean when I rescued you... "

Back at the distillery, Marty has gone off to find his hero and savior a bottle of whiskey. Just as he finds the elusive item, he sees something glowing underneath some wooden flooring. He pries a board up and finds the Espheni transmitter. Telling Weaver, Marty gets more praise for his find than for the whiskey and it looks like this may turn the tide of the war.

Back at the farm, Tom has to tell Alicia's oldest son about the war that she has hidden from him. The boy finds remains of a Mega-Mech and Kyle tells Tom that he wants to be a fighter like his late father.

The episode ends with the family staying where they are, Hal finding Tom and returning to the 2nd Mass. Ben is upset, as is Anne; although she is angrier at Cochise, "you want to explain to me what you thought you were doing," she asks him and he replies, "Not really." Jessica may have bonded with Hal, but when they get back to the new camp, the existence of Maggie, who she was aware of, puts the dampers on this burgeoning relationship.

## Everybody Has Their Reasons

Season 5  
Episode Number: 49  
Season Episode: 7

Originally aired: Sunday August 9, 2015  
Writer: Ryan Mottesheard  
Director: Matt Earl Beesley  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Melora Hardin (Katie Marshall), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Daren A. Herbert (Lt. Demarcus Wolf), Bob Frazer (Lt. Shelton), Matt Bellefleur (Sgt. Zak Kagel), Lane Edwards (Sgt. Trevor Huston), Harrison MacDonald (Pvt. Grey), Jason McKinnon (Lt. Emmett), Jason Verner (14TH VA Soldier)  
Summary: The group finds a safe haven in the form of a functional military base run by Weaver's old flame. Meanwhile, plans spin into motion for a final assault on the Espheni, yet it dawns on the 2nd Mass that things aren't exactly as they seem.



The 2nd mass finds a military base on their way to DC and it turns out the person running it is an old flame of Weaver's, Capt Marshall. The base has everything they could need to take the fight to the Espheni in D.C. including armed vehicles, weapons and dozens of trained soldiers. As everyone settles in, Tom quickly starts to explain what they need in order to take the fight to the enemy but it doesn't seem like the military are all that interested in going out there to fight.

Weaver catches up with his old flame learning that they recently took on enemy fire a few weeks ago while on patrol and lost some men. She also talked about having to find and deal with human collaborators. As Tom and Hal showed them the maps from the Volm, they all seemed a bit shocked and concerned that Tom and the 2nd mass were working with aliens. While getting their first good meal in awhile Maggie and Hal have their first real conversation. Maggie knows that Isabella is a threat and she also feels she made a lot of mistakes herself but neither of them are backing down.

At the end of the night several soldiers sit down to drink with Hal, Isabella, Maggie and Ben and the soldiers seem very interested in Ben's spikes, even wanting to feel them. Ben allows it and fakes them out when he touches it. Zak Kagel gives him the nickname Superfreak. Later three soldiers find Ben in the locker room and ask that he come with them, guns drawn. Ben knows something isn't right and refuses to go with them. He easily breaks their weapons and tosses two of them into the mirror and lockers. However someone comes up from behind him and tases him, it was Zak Kagel who called him Superfreak.

Hal and Tom talk with the Lt Wolf confused as to why all he is doing is listening and not communicating with all the militia groups out there. He explains that he is under orders to listen only and determine if any of the groups are compromised by the Espheni, which as Hal pointed

out is a little paranoid. Weaver decides to have breakfast with Marshall, as they revisit old times. Anne continues to be helpful in the infirmary helping a soldier with an infection.

Ben is then seen strapped down to a gurney and Zak grabs him by the hair and starts to interrogate him. Apparently he is under orders to extract intel out of Ben, as they feel he is an Espheni spy. Ben doesn't have anything to say and tries to explain he is able to control his spikes but the soldier doesn't care. Katie Marshall approaches Tom asking why he is giving orders to her men. Tom wants to know why they are not contacting other militias and that they are all supposed to be on the same side. However she seems dead set on focusing on human collaborators and not major offensives.

Back to Ben being interrogated, it quickly escalates to torture as Zak uses a pair of pliers to forcibly remove one of Ben's spikes. Ben screams out in pain as it's yanked out and goes into a seizure. The spike decides to attack the soldier who then steps on it and kills it. As soon as the spike was killed, Ben blacks out. Tom finds out Ben hasn't been seen since last night and starts to raise hell asking where he is and Lt. Shelton refuses to tell him. He ends up getting himself arrested and then all of the 2nd mass ends up getting rounded up. Matt manages to stay hidden while Weaver goes to Katie Marshall asking what the hell is going on.

She has an entire investigation on them and feels that Tom's story of flying to the moon and the fact that Ben has spikes that they are all collaborators and she is setting up a court-martial to determine the truth. Weaver finds Matt and helps him disguise himself as a soldier to escape the base and get to Cochise and Dingaana for help. Isabella is nearly assaulted by Zak, but Maggie arrives in time to save her. When Isabella tries to explain about Hal and herself, Maggie tells her that her relationship with Hal had been ruined long before Isabella arrived. She then insists that they need to remain together if they are going to survive this latest betrayal.

The court-martial begins and Ben is dragged in barely able to walk or think straight, and Tom and Weaver both find out he was tortured. Weaver is shocked and Tom is furious but she continues to move forward with the trial. She went through each and every case in which Tom was captured and found his way back without explanation and she just can't believe any of it's true. When Tom begins to berate her about the entire thing being a farce, she stares out into nothing and her wound begins to bleed again. She closes the file on Tom, Ben and Hal and declares them traitors, charging them with treason for which the sentence is death. The episode ends revealing that an Overlord has been watching the naval base.

## Stalag 14th Virginia

Season 5

Episode Number: 50

Season Episode: 8

Originally aired: Sunday August 16, 2015  
Writer: Jack Kenny  
Director: Noah Wyle  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Melora Hardin (Katie Marshall), Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Daren A. Herbert (Lt. Demarcus Wolf), Bob Frazer (Lt. Shelton), Matt Bellefleur (Sgt. Zak Kagel), Lane Edwards (Sgt. Trevor Huston), Harrison MacDonald (Pvt. Grey), Jeremy Schuetze (Stokes), Jason William Day (Franklin), Seth Whittaker (Williams), Nigel Vonas (Morales), Doron Bell (Goodman), D. Harlan Cutshall (Joe Butterfield)  
Summary: Weaver discovers a startling truth about an old friend and sets out to protect the 2nd Mass. Elsewhere, Maggie and Isabella are forced to work together, and Tom leads an attempted escape by the 2nd Mass.



Weaver follows Katie Marshall out to the woods one night to discover she's meeting with an overlord, which Weaver throtles with his belt after she leaves. Weaver shows Demarcus Wolf and they bring it back to gauge Marshall's response. Marshall looks shocked, and the 14th soldiers want to move out and kill the other aliens in a quick sweep, however she refuses and orders them to burn the body.

One by one, the Masons end up in prison, being guarded by Lt. Shelton. Tom, Hal, Ben and Anne who betrayed by

Trevor Huston after mentioned that her daughter was half Espheni. Maggie and Isabella worked together to free their men while Matt is on a motorbike off to bring more troops to help.

Weaver finds soldiers who agree with them and try to overthrow Marshall, but after Lt. Shelton lets the Masons free and is shot and killed by Zak Kagel, the soldiers fall back in line. Marshall shows Weaver the graveyard of 31 collaborators she has had executed in the last six weeks.

The Masons and Wolf begin to be lined up on the firing line, and Anne Mason gives a last speech to the 14th and to the 2nd Mass fighters who are forced to watch in a cage. Ben Mason tries to plead with Pvt. Grey not to do anything. Zak Kagel begins the execution by giving orders to the soldiers, however on the command "shoot", no soldier shoots. The soldiers are Stokes, Williams, Franklin and Goodman, all soldiers who are against Marshall. A truck storms in with Tom Mason inside and begins taking the hoods off his family. Kagel pulls out a gun but Isabella shoots him before she can shoot one of the Masons. Marshall pulls out a gun to shoot Cochise, but is stabbed by Weaver and we discover that Marshall is an experimental clone, and the real Marshall died six weeks ago in an ambush.

We jump to Trevor Huston who is walking on a road then is held hostage by Anthony. We see Pope, who is holding a fight to the death match with his crew on a throne. Anthony brings Trevor who tells Pope that Tom is still alive.

Cochise figured a way to bring the Espheni communication device with them and Ben sticks his hand in it. He sees all the Overlords bowing down before a higher being.



## Reunion

Season 5

Episode Number: 51

Season Episode: 9

Originally aired: Sunday August 23, 2015  
Writer: Marc Dube  
Director: Brad Turner  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Scarlett Byrne (Lexi), Jennifer Ferrin (Rebecca Mason), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Taylor Russell (Evelyn), Daren A. Herbert (Lt. Demarcus Wolf), Lane Edwards (Sgt. Trevor Huston), Jon Johnson (Jon), D Harlan Cutshall (Joe Butterfield), Greg Zach (Franks), Zack Daniels (Zack), Nico Amoroso (Nico), Jy Harris (Streaks), Chad Riley (Lawrence Biggs), Jeff Aro (Pope's Gang Member)  
Summary: Tom gains a powerful new weapon against the Espheni. Meanwhile, Ben risks his life to snatch enemy plans; Pope launches a final attack; and an unforeseen visitor appears, causing the 2nd Mass to reevaluate their situation.



Ben is obsessed with trying to figure out what the Espheni communication hub they found is hiding and with him being the only person that can survive prolonged contact with the Shadow Plane, he feels that it is his cross to bear and refuses to stop trying despite the fact that every time he dives into it he loses his strength. Before being pulled away from the hub he manages to figure out that there is some form of Queen and she is on her way into the battle.

With the 2nd Mass now in control of the military base and their radio equipment they have for the first time, the ability to communicate with the other "Mason Militias" that are going to be joining them when they undertake their final stand in DC. After their first real high of hearing the other militias over the radio Tom is almost immediately summoned away by the Dornia that have been guiding him to the shore and giving him something that will help him when the time is right, a weapon that has the power to take out the Queen that is coming, wipe out the rest of the Espheni, and end the war once and for all.

Matt and Maggie stumble upon Alexis Glass-Mason in the woods while on patrol. With the familiar and long assumed dead face back at base camp everyone is understandably cautious considering their recent discovery of what the Espheni can do and nobody wants to accept the fact that it is actually her, they are all convinced that she is just another Espheni plant.

After Tom has a chance to speak to Lexi he has faith that she may actually be who she says she is or at the very least if she isn't then she can at least be useful to them in their final battle to come, she does manage to impart a little bit of wisdom from her time with the Espheni that if the Queen has come then it means that their goal has changed from a simple invasion to full occupation of Earth.

John Pope uses the goodness of the 2nd Mass to his advantage and infiltrate their base with a dozen or so armed men and start going trigger happy. Pope no longer just cares about killing Mason, he wants everyone in the 2nd Mass to die. Pope shoots two military soldiers before taking cover. When Trevor Huston aims his rifle at Anne Mason, Anthony realizes what he is doing is wrong, and shields Anne, being shot in the shoulder by Trevor. Anne shoots and kills Trevor after. Tom and Weaver shoots barrels close to Pope, and after exploding it collapses a building onto his group.

Tom again speaks with Lexi, and when he gets close to her, Lexi pulls him through the chained cell. When Ben arrives, he throws the Dornia weapon at her, which latches on and begins to kill her. It is revealed that it was another "Katie Marshall" situation, and Lexi tells Tom that "we're onto you". Later, they destroy the communication hub, and when Tom gives a message to the militias, a group of Black Hornet's begin to fly to their position.

# Reborn

Season 5

Episode Number: 52

Season Episode: 10

Originally aired: Sunday August 30, 2015  
Writer: David Eick  
Director: Olatunde Osunsanmi  
Show Stars: Noah Wyle (Tom Mason), Moon Bloodgood (Anne Glass), Drew Roy (Hal Mason), Connor Jessup (Ben Mason), Colin Cunningham (John Pope), Maxim Knight (Matt Mason), Sarah Carter (Margaret), Mpho Koaho (Anthony), Will Patton (Weaver), Doug Jones (Cochise)  
Guest Stars: Treva Etienne (Dingaana Botha), Catalina Sandino Moreno (Isabella), Todd Weeks (Marty), Taylor Russell (Evelyn), Daren A. Herbert (Lt. Demarcus Wolf), Jeff Fahey (Enos Ellis), Tricia Helfer (The Queen (voice)), Scott McNeil (JickJack), Hugo Ateo (Mothball)  
Summary: The final standoff brings the Masons, the 2nd Mass, and their new allies into the bowels of an iconic American location, wrought with new and unpredictable obstacles. Despite great loss along the way, they must persevere with hopes of once and for all reclaiming Earth and humanity.



It begins with a voice over and montage of photos exactly like the pilot episode, but with added enemy sketches and voiced by the same but much older Matt Mason. The short battle at the military base results in losses including that of Marty, after being stabbed in the chest by a Black Hornet's tale

A Mason Militia biker gang arrives to meet up and leave for DC and the plan is laid out. The 2nd Mass are notified by another militia currently at DC that the enemy has formed a giant wall around the

Lincoln Memorial area. The only way in is through some underground tunnels that Lt. Wolf happens to know as he lived in DC as a kid. They waste no time fast forwarding to the team being at DC and they begin their trek under ground. What they run into under ground is unlike anything they the 2nd Mass have seen before, baby Espheni eggs. Cochise comments that they are very violent when they are first-born, a references again the time eleven of his team were killed by newborns. The group are notified to be careful and not to disturb the eggs as they make their way to the heart of the enemy.

As they get close to the end, one of the creatures erupts from the egg and kills JickJack. With everyone hunkering down for the blast in an enclosed space, Hal grabs Maggie and asks her to marry him. With the grenade fired by Wolf, who aims it a nest of eggs, everyone takes a small hit from the blast, including Anne who seems to have been blown back against the concrete. Tom is separated from them with rubble between them and Wolf is trapped and killed underneath the rubble.

Tom makes it outside to see the gathering forces of the enemy and comes face to face with the Espheni Queen. Tom attempts to provoke her into coming out of hiding so he can use the Dornian weapon but she spits a substance at him and pins him to the wall. She mocks his request and goes on to tell Tom why humanity deserves this fate. It turns out the Espheni came

to earth nearly 1500 years ago and met our primitive ancestors. They wanted earth for it being the only habitable planet in the galaxy and a strategical sound location. She sent her best warrior, her daughter. The humans of that era killed all of them and ate their flesh in order to gain her strength. And now she is back to take out her revenge on earth.

The rest of the 2nd Mass make it outside after having to go the long way and Anne collapses revealing the injury from the blast that has her near death. Ben runs off to find his father who is struggling to reach his weapon. As he tries, the queen begins to drink his blood and plans on sucking him dry. Tom manages to reach the weapon but unable to throw it, allows it to attach to him and poison his blood. As she drinks it, it poisons her and in an instant she disintegrates. And so does the entire army of hornets, skitters, Espheni Overlords and other creatures. Just as they start to die in the sky, we see Anne die from her injuries and cut back to Ben finding his father. After confirming that its done and they are all dead, there is a moment when Ben gives a concerned look and we cut to Tom asking whats wrong. Ben leads Tom to a now dead Anne.

Only Tom knows she is pregnant and in a moment of flashback he remembers what the Dornian did for him after he froze to death in the beamer and he picks Anne up and heads back to the shore. Tom carries Anne asking for the Dornian to help him save her and the baby. The Dornian reply and take Anne under water. Just then, Pope turns up behind Tom: Pope. Pope was saved by a fellow group of militia near by and has a gun pointed at Tom who doesn't really care about Pope right now. Pope just doesn't have it in him anymore to do this and tries to give the gun to Tom to shoot him but Tom refuses to fight anymore, the war is over. Pope hating Tom to the very end, dies sitting down on the beach.

We cut away to Matt writing as he narrates the final moments of the war. We see the cover of the book he was writing in being "Last of the World War" and watch as Tom reads it thinking it was great. Everyone is preparing for Tom's big speech and wearing galaxy pins to represent their new alliance with the Volm. As we get ready to hear Tom's final speech we get a view of each members new life now that the war is over. Matt is his father's son, likely to be a history professor of his own once we gets older. Hal and Maggie are an item and we assume they got married. Ben is seen with the Volm delegation which seems fitting since he still has his spikes and is an intellectual at heart, along with Cochise and Shaq. Weaver is a proud watching Matt and the others group up, even saluting those who stood by him, DINGAAN Botha and Anthony. Isabella and Enos Ellis are speaking with a group of their peers. Anne is alive and still pregnant, having been saved by the Dornian. As we pan out on Tom giving his final speech, the last of the survivors and the last of the 2nd Massachusetts Militia Regiment cheer for their friend and leader Tom, as we zoom out into space to see Orion's Belt with the message that "we are not alone out there".

# Actor Appearances

## A

Larissa Albuquerque.....	1
0307 (Bibby Pickett)	
Nico Amoroso.....	3
0504 (2nd Mass Member); 0505 (Pope Crew Mem- ber); 0509 (Nico)	
China Anderson.....	1
0101 (Young Survivor Kid (voice))	
Michael Antonakos.....	1
0402 (Alex)	
Jeff Aro.....	1
0509 (Pope's Gang Member)	
Hugo Ateo.....	1
0510 (Mothball)	
Dylan Authors.....	8
0101 (Jimmy Boland); 0102 (Jimmy Boland); 0103 (Jimmy Boland); 0104 (Jimmy Boland); 0105 (Jimmy Boland); 0106 (Jimmy Boland); 0107 (Jimmy Boland); 0108 (Jimmy Boland)	

## B

Joshua J. Ballard.....	1
0402 (Skip)	
Michael Bean.....	1
0309 (Dr. Sumner)	
Iain Belcher.....	1
0307 (Luke Pickett)	
Doron Bell.....	1
0508 (Goodman)	
Matt Bellefleur.....	2
0507 (Sgt. Zak Kagel); 0508 (Sgt. Zak Kagel)	
Gil Bellows.....	1
0405 (Nick Phillips)	
Wes Berger.....	3
0105 (John); 0109 (John); 0110 (John)	
Evan Bird.....	1
0204 (Jonny)	
Dalias Blake.....	1
0307 (Tow Truck Operator)	
Brianne Brozey.....	1
0102 (Actress)	
Hector Bucio.....	3
0204 (Diego); 0301 (Diego); 0302 (Diego)	
Christie Burke.....	1
0408 (Elise)	
Adam Butcher.....	1
0101 (Farley)	
Scarlett Byrne.....	12
0401 (Lexi); 0402 (Lexi); 0403 (Lexi); 0404 (Lexi); 0405 (Lexi); 0406 (Lexi); 0407 (Lexi); 0408 (Lexi); 0410 (Lexi); 0411 (Lexi); 0412 (Lexi); 0509 (Lexi)	

## C

Ken Camroux.....	1
------------------	---

0306 (Judge)	
Luciana Carro.....	10
0202 (Crazy Lee); 0203 (Crazy Lee); 0205 (Crazy Lee); 0206 (Crazy Lee); 0207 (Crazy Lee); 0209 (Crazy Lee); 0210 (Crazy Lee); 0301 (Crazy Lee); 0302 (Crazy Lee); 0303 (Crazy Lee)	
Zachary Choe.....	1
0401 (Young Boy)	
Lilli Clark.....	1
0304 (Radio Operator)	
Robert Clotworthy.....	1
0408 (The Monk (voice))	
James Collins.....	8
0101 (Cueball); 0102 (Cueball); 0103 (Cueball); 0104 (Cueball); 0105 (Cueball); 0106 (Cueball); 0107 (Cueball); 0108 (Cueball)	
Stephen Collins.....	2
0304 (President Hathaway); 0307 (President Hath- away)	
Bruce Crawford.....	1
0401 (Vagrant)	
Nneka Croal.....	2
0304 (Nurse); 0307 (Aide)	
Caitlin Cromwell.....	1
0203 (Mother)	
Colin Cunningham.....	1
0207 (John Pope)	
D. Harlan Cutshall.....	1
0508 (Joe Butterfield)	
D Harlan Cutshall.....	1
0509 (Joe Butterfield)	

## D

Al Dales.....	1
0502 (Russell)	
Zack Daniels.....	1
0509 (Zack)	
Daniyah Ysrayl.....	7
0102 (Rick); 0103 (Rick); 0104 (Rick); 0105 (Rick); 0106 (Rick); 0107 (Rick); 0108 (Rick)	
Megan Danso.....	11
0301 (Deni); 0302 (Deni); 0304 (Deni); 0308 (Deni); 0401 (Deni); 0402 (Deni); 0403 (Deni); 0404 (Deni); 0407 (Deni); 0408 (Deni); 0501 (Deni)	
Dakota Daulby.....	5
0401 (Kent); 0402 (Kent); 0403 (Kent); 0404 (Kent); 0409 (Kent)	
Cody Davis.....	1
0501 (Toughie)	
Jason William Day.....	1
0508 (Franklin)	
John DeSantis.....	5
0404 (Shak); 0405 (Shak); 0409 (Guest star); 0501 (Shaq); 0504 (Shaq)	
Lynne Deragon.....	1
0101 (Kate Gordon)	
Aaron Douglas.....	1

0405 (Cooper Phillips)  
 Brad Dryborough ..... 1  
 0209 (Doctor)  
 Dale Dye ..... 16  
 0101 (Porter); 0102 (Porter); 0103 (Porter); 0104  
 (Porter); 0105 (Porter); 0106 (Porter); 0107 (Porter);  
 0108 (Porter); 0208 (Jim Porter); 0209 (Porter);  
 0210 (Porter); 0301 (Porter); 0302 (Porter); 0303  
 (Porter); 0304 (Porter); 0309 (Porter)

E

Elias Edraki ..... 1  
 0101 (Wilson)  
 Lane Edwards ..... 3  
 0507 (Sgt. Trevor Huston); 0508 (Sgt. Trevor Hus-  
 ton); 0509 (Sgt. Trevor Huston)  
 Treva Etienne ..... 21  
 0401 (Dingaana Botha); 0402 (Dingaana Botha); 0403  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0404 (Dingaana Botha); 0405  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0406 (Dingaana Botha); 0407  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0408 (Dingaana Botha); 0409  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0410 (Dingaana Botha); 0411  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0501 (Dingaana Botha); 0502  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0503 (Dingaana Botha); 0504  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0505 (Dingaana Botha); 0506  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0507 (Dingaana Botha); 0508  
 (Dingaana Botha); 0509 (Dingaana Botha); 0510  
 (Dingaana Botha)

F

Jeff Fahey ..... 1  
 0510 (Enos Ellis)  
 Jennifer Ferrin ..... 6  
 0308 (Rebecca Mason); 0501 (Rebecca Mason); 0502  
 (Rebecca Mason); 0504 (Rebecca Mason); 0505  
 (Rebecca Mason); 0509 (Rebecca Mason)  
 Nikolas Filipovic ..... 1  
 0304 (Markley)  
 Jaelyn Forbes ..... 4  
 0101 (Elyse); 0105 (Elyse); 0106 (Elyse); 0107 (El-  
 yse)  
 Erika Forest ..... 1  
 0310 (Alexis)  
 Bob Frazer ..... 2  
 0507 (Lt. Shelton); 0508 (Lt. Shelton)  
 Matt Frewer ..... 6  
 0209 (General Bressler); 0210 (General Bressler);  
 0301 (General Bressler); 0302 (General Bressler);  
 0304 (General Bressler); 0305 (General Cole  
 Bressler)

G

Bruce Gray ..... 8  
 0101 (Uncle Scott); 0102 (Uncle Scott); 0103 (Uncle  
 Scott); 0104 (Uncle Scott); 0105 (Uncle Scott);  
 0106 (Uncle Scott); 0107 (Uncle Scott); 0108  
 (Uncle Scott)  
 Dakota Guppy ..... 1  
 0506 (Jessica)

H

Jonathan Hagey ..... 1  
 0101 (Refugee)  
 Emily Hahn ..... 1  
 0101 (Young Survivor Kid (voice))

Melora Hardin ..... 2  
 0507 (Katie Marshall); 0508 (Katie Marshall)  
 Jy Harris ..... 1  
 0509 (Streaks)  
 Rob Hayter ..... 1  
 0501 (Scotty)  
 Tricia Helfer ..... 1  
 0510 (The Queen (voice))  
 Daren A. Herbert ..... 4  
 0507 (Lt. Demarcus Wolf); 0508 (Lt. Demarcus Wolf);  
 0509 (Lt. Demarcus Wolf); 0510 (Lt. Demar-  
 cus Wolf)  
 Christopher Heyerdahl ..... 1  
 0307 (Duane Pickett)  
 Bryce Hodgson ..... 1  
 0402 (Guest Star)  
 Michael Hogan ..... 1  
 0304 (General Donovan)  
 Chelah Horsdal ..... 1  
 0506 (Alicia)  
 Rebecca Husain ..... 1  
 0403 (Martha)

J

Woody Jeffreys ..... 1  
 0402 (Dick)  
 Noel Johansen ..... 1  
 0505 (Ken)  
 Jon Johnson ..... 1  
 0509 (Jon)  
 Brent Jones ..... 1  
 0101 (Click)  
 Doug Jones ..... 16  
 0301 (Cochise); 0302 (Cochise); 0304 (Cochise); 0308  
 (Cochise); 0309 (Cochise); 0401 (Cochise); 0402  
 (Cochise); 0403 (Cochise); 0404 (Cochise); 0405  
 (Cochise); 0407 (Cochise); 0408 (Cochise); 0409  
 (Cochise); 0410 (Cochise); 0411 (Cochise); 0412  
 (Cochise)

K

Jared Keeso ..... 2  
 0301 (Lars); 0302 (Lars)  
 Brad Kelly ..... 17  
 0201 (Lyle); 0202 (Lyle); 0203 (Lyle); 0205 (Lyle);  
 0206 (Lyle); 0207 (Lyle); 0209 (Lyle); 0301 (Lyle);  
 0302 (Lyle); 0303 (Lyle); 0304 (Lyle); 0306 (Lyle);  
 0307 (Lyle); 0308 (Lyle); 0309 (Lyle); 0310 (Lyle);  
 0401 (Lyle)  
 Melissa Kramer ..... 7  
 0101 (Sarah); 0103 (Sarah); 0104 (Sarah); 0105  
 (Sarah); 0106 (Sarah); 0109 (Sarah); 0110 (Sarah)  
 Jessica Kristy ..... 1  
 0101 (Teen)  
 Sean Michael Kyer ..... 1  
 0304 (Tommy)

L

Nicole LaPlaca ..... 2  
 0401 (Young Woman); 0402 (Young Woman)  
 Johnny Larocque ..... 1  
 0103 (Soldier)  
 Raw Leiba ..... 1  
 0403 (Cain)  
 Robert Sean Leonard ..... 9  
 0302 (Roger Kadar); 0304 (Dr. Roger Kadar); 0305  
 (Dr. Roger Kadar); 0309 (Roger Kadar); 0310

(Dr. Roger Kadar); **0402** (Roger Kadar); **0405** (Roger Kadar); **0406** (Roger Kadar); **0407** (Roger Kadar)

Connor Christopher Levins ..... 1  
**0204** (Julian)

Terry Lewis ..... 1  
**0505** (Drew)

Cynthia Loewen ..... 1  
**0306** (Accountant)

Yulia Lukin ..... 6  
**0102** (Soldier); **0105** (Soldier); **0106** (Soldier); **0107** (Soldier); **0109** (Soldier); **0110** (Soldier)

M

Harrison MacDonald ..... 2  
**0507** (Pvt. Grey); **0508** (Pvt. Grey)

Laine MacNeil ..... 1  
**0201** (Teresa)

Laci J Mailey ..... 2  
**0309** (Jeanne); **0403** (Jeanne)

Laci J. Mailey ..... 10  
**0204** (Jeanne); **0209** (Jeanne); **0210** (Jeanne); **0301** (Jeanne); **0302** (Jeanne Weaver); **0305** (Jeanne Weaver); **0308** (Jeanne); **0310** (Jeanne Weaver); **0401** (Jeanne); **0404** (Jeanne)

Roy Marshall ..... 2  
**0301** (Roy); **0302** (Roy)

Daniel Martin ..... 1  
**0403** (Bill)

John H. Mayer ..... 2  
**0501** (Waschak-Cha'ab); **0504** (Waschak-Cha'ab)

Jason McKinnon ..... 1  
**0507** (Lt. Emmett)

Brandon Jay McLaren ..... 7  
**0201** (Jamil Dexter); **0202** (Jamil Dexter); **0203** (Jamil Dexter); **0204** (Jamil Dexter); **0205** (Jamil Dexter); **0206** (Jamil Dexter); **0207** (Jamil Dexter)

Chris McNally ..... 1  
**0504** (Ryan)

Scott McNeil ..... 1  
**0510** (JickJack)

Gerry Mendoza ..... 1  
**0101** (Tai Chi Civilian)

Brendan Meyer ..... 1  
**0506** (Kyle)

Mya Michaels ..... 1  
**0101** (Parent #2)

Ali Milner ..... 1  
**0401** (Girl)

Nathan Mitchell ..... 1  
**0105** (Parker)

Darren Moore ..... 1  
**0306** (Customer)

Catalina Sandino Moreno ..... 6  
**0505** (Isabella); **0506** (Isabella); **0507** (Isabella); **0508** (Isabella); **0509** (Isabella); **0510** (Isabella)

Wesley Morgan ..... 1  
**0101** (Simms)

Gage Munroe ..... 2  
**0101** (Eli Russell); **0106** (Eli Russell)

N

Paulino Nunes ..... 1  
**0105** (Frank)

O

Terry O'Quinn ..... 4

**0209** (Arthur Manchester); **0210** (Arthur Manchester); **0301** (Arthur Manchester); **0302** (Arthur Manchester)

Michael Ogbeiwi ..... 1  
**0408** (Adeleke)

Ty Olsson ..... 2  
**0209** (Sgt. Clemmons); **0210** (Sgt. Clemmons)

P

Christopher Pearce ..... 1  
**0402** (Second Ghost)

Blair Penner ..... 1  
**0305** (Guard)

Luvia Petersen ..... 1  
**0304** (Lt. Fisher)

Dean Petriw ..... 1  
**0506** (Zach)

Dan Petronijevic ..... 1  
**0101** (Billy)

Colin Pitts ..... 1  
**0101** (Fighter)

R

Geoff Redknap ..... 1  
**0501** (Puppeteer)

Gloria Reuben ..... 8  
**0301** (Marina Perlata); **0302** (Marina Perlata); **0303** (Marina Perlata); **0305** (Marina Peralta); **0306** (Marina Perlata); **0307** (Marina Peralta); **0308** (Marina Perlata); **0309** (Marina Peralta)

Dorinha Reynolds ..... 1  
**0305** (Dead Woman)

Devon Richards ..... 1  
**0101** (Militia Commando)

Chad Riley ..... 2  
**0505** (ND Survivor #1); **0509** (Lawrence Biggs)

Martin Roach ..... 1  
**0101** (Mike)

Ryan Robbins ..... 20  
**0201** (Tector); **0202** (Tector); **0203** (Tector); **0204** (Tector); **0205** (Tector); **0206** (Tector); **0207** (Tector); **0208** (Tector); **0209** (Tector); **0210** (Tector); **0302** (Tector); **0303** (Tector); **0304** (Tector); **0306** (Tector); **0402** (Tector); **0403** (Tector); **0404** (Tector); **0405** (Tector); **0406** (Tector); **0407** (Tector)

Michael Rogers ..... 1  
**0307** (Gil Pickett)

Desiree Ross ..... 4  
**0402** (Mira); **0403** (Mira); **0404** (Mira); **0409** (Mira)

Disiree Ross ..... 1  
**0401** (Mira)

Taylor Russell ..... 4  
**0502** (Evelyn); **0503** (Evelyn); **0509** (Evelyn); **0510** (Evelyn)

S

Michelle Sabat ..... 1  
**0505** (Beth)

Matreya Scarrwener ..... 3  
**0401** (Shiela); **0402** (Sheila); **0403** (Sheila)

Jessy Schram ..... 11  
**0201** (Karen); **0206** (Karen); **0207** (Karen); **0210** (Karen); **0301** (Karen); **0302** (Karen); **0303** (Karen); **0308** (Karen); **0310** (Karen); **0403** (Karen); **0406** (Karen)

Jeremy Schuetze ..... 1

0508 (Stokes)	
Ali Skovbye	1
0304 (Emily)	
Michael Smith	1
0505 (Rob)	
Mira Sorvino	9
0404 (Sara); 0405 (Sara); 0407 (Sara); 0408 (Sara);	
0409 (Sara); 0412 (Sara); 0501 (Sara); 0502	
(Sara); 0503 (Sara)	
Llyane Stanfield	1
0103 (Civilian)	
Olivia Steele-Falconer	1
0208 (Jenny)	
Tom Stevens	1
0307 (Steve Pickett)	
Julia Sarah Stone	2
0502 (Caitlin); 0503 (Caitlin)	
Sylvesta Stuart	1
0304 (Soldier)	
Sarah Stunt	1
0107 (Tessa Greene)	

T

Emily Tennant	1
0409 (Team Leader #2)	
Julia Torrance	1
0401 (Dark Haired Little Girl)	
Randy Triggs	2
0109 (Gibson); 0110 (Gibson)	

U

Mireille Urumuri	1
0408 (Idrissa)	
Daesha Danielle Usman	1
0407 (Joy)	

V

Jorge Vargas	2
0301 (Card Player); 0302 (Card Player)	
Joe Vercillo	2
0105 (Clayton's Soldier); 0106 (Clayton's Soldier)	
Jason Verner	1
0507 (14TH VA Soldier)	
Nigel Vonas	1
0508 (Morales)	

W

Timothy Webber	1
0506 (Willie McComb)	
Steven Weber	2
0103 (Michael Harris); 0104 (Dr. Harris)	
Todd Weeks	6
0505 (Marty); 0506 (Marty); 0507 (Marty); 0508 (Marty);	
0509 (Marty); 0510 (Marty)	
Seth Whittaker	1
0508 (Williams)	
Billy Wickman	4
0204 (Boon); 0205 (Boon); 0206 (Boon); 0207 (Boon)	
Cainan Wiebe	2
0209 (Marshall); 0210 (Marshall)	

Z

Greg Zach	1
0509 (Franks)	
Kyra Zagorsky	1
0201 (Bonnie)	